

# SANCTIFICATION IN THE LORD

---

From a Christian Perspective

**By Michael Bradley**

**5/17/2012**

*The Sanctification in the Lord – From a Christian Perspective* is copyrighted by Bible Knowledge Ministries. No portion of this Ebook may be reprinted or reproduced in any way without the author's express written permission except by the authorized purchaser of this Ebook.

You may make copies for his or her own use.

©2012 by Bible Knowledge Ministries. All Rights Reserved

Sanctification in the Lord



# Table of Contents

<b>SANCTIFICATION .....</b>	<b>1</b>
1. WE ARE NOW SANCTIFIED IN CHRIST JESUS.....	6
2. SANCTIFICATION IS A PROGRESSIVE PROCESS.....	7
3. GOD IS CALLING ALL OF US TO SANCTIFICATION.....	8
4. SANCTIFICATION IS DONE BY THE WORD AND THE HOLY SPIRIT.....	9
HOW TO ENTER INTO THE SANCTIFICATION PROCESS WITH THE LORD.....	13
1. <i>Decide If You Really Want It</i> .....	14
2. <i>Ask God the Father to Begin the Sanctification Process</i> .....	14
3. <i>Study the Word For the Knowledge That You Will Need</i> .....	16
4. <i>Work in Cooperation With the Holy Spirit During This Process</i> .....	17
CONCLUSION.....	19
<b>GOD IS THE POTTER, WE ARE THE CLAY .....</b>	<b>21</b>
1. GOD NEEDS THE WORD IN US BEFORE HE CAN START THE SANCTIFICATION PROCESS.....	22
2. YOU HAVE TO BE PROPERLY "CENTERED" IN JESUS CHRIST.....	24
3. SANCTIFICATION IS A SLOW, STEADY, AND PROGRESSIVE PROCESS.....	25
4. GOD'S HAND WILL PERSONALLY MOLD, SHAPE, AND TRANSFORM YOU.....	26
5. LET GOD DEVELOP YOU TO YOUR FULLEST POTENTIAL IN THIS LIFE.....	27
6. GOD KNOWS EXACTLY WHAT HE WANTS TO DO WITH YOUR LIFE.....	28
7. DO NOT STRETCH BEYOND THE BOUNDARY LINES THAT GOD HAS SET UP FOR YOUR LIFE.....	29
8. GOD'S EYES AND ATTENTION ARE ALWAYS ON YOU.....	29
9. GOD WILL ALWAYS BE DOING MAJOR PRUNING IN YOUR LIFE.....	30
10. LET GOD MOLD YOU INTO THE SPECIFIC PERSON HE WANTS YOU TO BECOME IN HIM.....	30
CONCLUSION.....	31
<b>SEEKING AFTER THE LORD WITH ALL OF YOUR HEART .....</b>	<b>33</b>
1. GOD IS LOOKING FOR SEEKERS.....	40
2. SEEKING AFTER THE LORD.....	41
3. GOD CREATED US FOR INTIMATE FELLOWSHIP.....	43
4. TALK TO GOD LIKE YOU WOULD TALK TO A BEST FRIEND.....	44
5. GOD IS LOOKING FOR PASSIONATE AND INTENSE PEOPLE.....	46
5 WAYS TO SEEK AFTER THE LORD.....	49
1. <i>Your Prayer Life With the Lord</i> .....	49
2. <i>Reading and Studying From the Bible</i> .....	52
3. <i>Reading and Studying From Other Christian Books</i> .....	54
4. <i>Fellowship With Other Believers</i> .....	54
5. <i>Watch For the Lord to Move in Your Everyday Life</i> .....	55
CONCLUSION.....	56
<b>LIVING A GOOD AND RIGHTEOUS LIFE BEFORE THE LORD .....</b>	<b>59</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	64
1. <i>Jesus Did Not Come to Destroy the Law – But to Fulfill It</i> .....	64
2. <i>God Now Has His Basic Laws Written Into Man's Hearts</i> .....	66

3. <i>God Still Wants All of Us to Practice Righteousness</i> .....	68
4. <i>Keeping the Commandments of the Lord</i> .....	70
CONCLUSION.....	75
<b>WORSHIPING THE LORD .....</b>	<b>77</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	83
CONCLUSION.....	86
<b>MINDSET – BEING TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND .....</b>	<b>88</b>
1. KNOWLEDGE FROM THE WORD .....	88
2. PUT ON POSITIVE QUALITIES – PUT AWAY NEGATIVE QUALITIES.....	90
3. BY THE POWER OF THE THE HOLY SPIRIT.....	92
<b>YOU ARE WHAT YOU THINK .....</b>	<b>98</b>
1. YOU ARE WHAT YOU THINK.....	102
2. YOU ARE TRANSFORMED BY THE RENEWING OF YOUR MIND.....	102
3. WE NOW HAVE THE MIND OF CHRIST.....	103
4. GOD HAS GIVEN US A SOUND MIND.....	104
5. YOUR THOUGHTS WILL BE ESTABLISHED BY THE LORD.....	105
6. BRING EVERY THOUGHT INTO CAPTIVITY TO THE OBEDIENCE OF JESUS.....	106
CONCLUSION.....	108
<b>DEATH AND LIFE ARE IN THE POWER OF THE TONGUE .....</b>	<b>111</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	114
1. <i>Death and Life Are in the Power of the Tongue</i> .....	114
2. <i>Rebuking the Wicked</i> .....	117
3. <i>Do Not Bear False Witness Against Your Neighbor</i> .....	118
4. <i>Shun Profane and Vain Babblings</i> .....	120
5. <i>God Will Judge You By Your Words</i> .....	121
CONCLUSION.....	122
<b>IN THE WORLD – BUT NOT OF THE WORLD .....</b>	<b>125</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	128
CONCLUSION.....	129
<b>GOD IS NO RESPECTER OF PERSONS .....</b>	<b>133</b>
<b>THE 9 FRUITS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT .....</b>	<b>140</b>
1. LOVE.....	142
2. JOY.....	143
3. PEACE.....	145
4. LONGSUFFERING.....	146
5. KINDNESS.....	147
6. GOODNESS.....	148
7. FAITHFULNESS.....	150
8. GENTLENESS.....	152
9. SELF-CONTROL.....	153

CONCLUSION.....	155
<b>THE POWER OF LOVE .....</b>	<b>158</b>
1. LOVE IS THE GREATEST OF ALL THE VIRTUES.....	162
2. WALK IN LOVE.....	164
3. WHAT LOVE IS.....	165
4. LOVING GOD.....	166
5. LOVING YOURSELF.....	168
6. LOVING OTHERS.....	171
7. LOVING YOUR ENEMIES.....	173
8. BE DOERS OF THE WORD.....	176
CONCLUSION.....	177
<b>LETTING GO OF YOUR PAST .....</b>	<b>179</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	184
CONCLUSION.....	185
<b>BE ANXIOUS FOR NOTHING.....</b>	<b>189</b>
1. BE ANXIOUS FOR NOTHING.....	191
2. DO NOT HAVE AN ANXIOUS MIND.....	192
3. DO NOT WORRY ABOUT YOUR LIFE.....	194
CONCLUSION.....	196
<b>GODLINESS WITH CONTENTMENT IS GREAT GAIN.....</b>	<b>199</b>
1. BE CONTENT WITH SUCH THINGS AS YOU HAVE.....	204
2. BE CONTENT IN WHATEVER STATE YOU ARE IN.....	205
3. GODLINESS WITH CONTENTMENT IS GREAT GAIN.....	207
CONCLUSION.....	209
<b>SLAVE TO NONE – SERVANT TO ALL .....</b>	<b>212</b>
1. SLAVE TO NONE – SERVANT TO ALL.....	216
2. BE SUBJECT TO RULERS AND AUTHORITIES.....	217
3. MASTERS – TREAT YOUR SERVANTS JUST AND FAIR.....	218
4. SUBMISSION IN YOUR MARRIAGE.....	220
CONCLUSION.....	221
<b>BE SLOW TO ANGER.....</b>	<b>224</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	227
CONCLUSION.....	229
<b>PRIDE WILL COME BEFORE THE FALL .....</b>	<b>231</b>
1. PRIDE IS A SIN AND AN ABOMINATION.....	238
2. GOD IS AFAR FROM THOSE WHO ARE PROUD.....	239
3. PRIDE WILL COME BEFORE THE FALL.....	239
4. LET NO ONE GLORY IN MEN.....	241
5. STAY HUMBLE IN YOUR WALK WITH THE LORD.....	242
6. THE FALL OF SATAN.....	243

CONCLUSION.....	250
<b>THE SIN OF ADULTERY .....</b>	<b>254</b>
1. THOU SHALL NOT COMMIT ADULTERY.....	257
2. ADULTERY IS A SIN.....	258
3. ABSTAIN FROM FLESHLY LUSTS WHICH WAR AGAINST THE SOUL.....	260
4. THE MOUTH OF AN IMMORAL WOMAN IS A DEEP PIT .....	262
5. GOD WILL BE JUDGING ALL ADULTERERS.....	264
6. BLESSED IS THE MAN WHO ENDURES TEMPTATION.....	265
CONCLUSION.....	267
<b>THE SIN OF FORNICATION .....</b>	<b>271</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	272
CONCLUSION.....	276
<b>DO NOT COVET YOUR NEIGHBOR'S GOODS .....</b>	<b>278</b>
CONCLUSION.....	283
<b>FOR RICHES ARE NOT FOREVER .....</b>	<b>285</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	288
CONCLUSION.....	292
<b>GOD IS SLOW TO ANGER .....</b>	<b>294</b>
<b>GOD WILL TAKE YOU BACK – NO MATTER HOW FAR YOU HAVE BACKSLID .....</b>	<b>298</b>
1. THE STORY OF THE PRODIGAL SON.....	300
2. GOD WILL FORGIVE ALL OF YOUR SINS.....	301
3. THE LOVE AND MERCY OF GOD.....	304
HOW TO GET BACK ON TRACK WITH THE LORD.....	306
1. <i>The Full Surrender</i> .....	306
2. <i>Confess All of Your Known Sins to the Lord</i> .....	307
3. <i>Re-establish Your Personal Relationship With the Lord and Start Growing in Him</i> .....	307
CONCLUSION.....	308
<b>GOD WILL HELP YOU WITH YOUR SIN AREAS .....</b>	<b>311</b>
1. BIBLE VERSES ON GOD'S MERCY AND PATIENCE.....	313
2. BE LED BY THE HOLY SPIRIT AS TO WHAT STEPS TO TAKE TO BREAK THE ADDICTION .....	316
3. BE WILLING TO ENTER INTO A TRUE SANCTIFICATION PROCESS WITH THE LORD .....	317
CONCLUSION.....	318
<b>THE POWER OF CHRISTIAN MUSIC IN YOUR HOME.....</b>	<b>321</b>
THE SCRIPTURE VERSES.....	322
CONCLUSION.....	326

# Sanctification

As you will see in the Scripture verses I will list in this article – God’s ultimate and highest aim for all of us is our sanctification in Him. God wants to make us more holy like Himself. He wants to transform us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ. He wants to consecrate and set us apart unto Himself.

The wording in these verses is very intense. One of the verses will tell us that God wants to sanctify us completely in all three parts of our being – body, soul, and spirit. Jesus Himself tells us that He wants us to be perfect just like His Father in heaven is perfect.

When you first look at these verses, you wonder how anyone could ever begin to achieve any real state of holiness in the cursed and fallen world we all now live in. With all of the lusts of our flesh, and with all of the different types of temptations of this world, many Christians never even attempt to give God half a chance to start this sanctification process in their life. They feel this bar is simply too high to even begin to strive for in this life.

The Bible tells us that all men and women have sinned and have fallen way short of the glory of God. We are so far from the perfection that God is really wanting from each one of us, that we see no real way to be able to obtain it to any significant degree in this life. As a result, many Christians never ask or seek after God to get this sanctification process started in their life – and as a result, there is very little, if any true spiritual growth over the course of most of their lives.

However, if you will study the specific wording in some of these verses, God the Father is showing you very clearly how this sanctification process can start to occur in this life. You do not have to wait until you get to heaven to get this sanctification process started with Him.

One of the first verses I will list below is telling us that we get three specific things as a result of Jesus dying on the cross for all of our sins. We get **redemption, righteousness, and sanctification.**

Most Christians know about the first two – redemption and righteousness – but they either forget, or do not pick up on the third thing that we all have available to us – and that is our **sanctification in the Lord!**

This sanctification is a progressive process. It is not something that occurs instantaneously at our conversions. It is a progressive work done by the Holy Spirit over the course of our entire life.

***The apostle Paul tells us that we have to "work out" our salvation with fear and trembling. He is telling us there are things that have to be worked out – and I believe one of those things is our sanctification in the Lord – the process where God the Father begins to set us apart unto Himself and to transform us into becoming more holy instruments of righteousness for His use.***

The different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries define the word **"sanctification"** as follows:

1. ***The state of growing in divine grace***
2. ***To set apart for holy purposes***
3. ***The process of being made holy resulting in a changed lifestyle for the believer***

Noted Bible scholar Jack Hayford, in his excellent book titled: " Hayford's Bible Handbook," defines sanctification as follows:

***"The work of God's grace by which the believer is separated from sin and becomes dedicated to God's righteousness. Accomplished by the Word of God and the Holy Spirit, sanctification results in holiness, or purification from the guilt and power of sin. Sanctification is instantaneous before God through Christ and progressive before man through obedience to the Holy Spirit and the Word."***

To those of you who have never really sought after the Lord to release this kind of supernatural work in your life – study these verses very, very carefully. God is giving you an incredible spiritual secret that can dramatically change the quality of your life down here on this earth.

As I said at the top of this article, you do not have to wait until you get to heaven to have God start this sanctification-transformation process in your life. It can literally start right where you are at right now if you are willing to fully surrender your entire life over to the Lord and then ask Him to begin to start this sanctification process in your life.

Before I go to the actual Scripture verses on all of this, consider one last thing. Even though this sanctification process appears to be a major leap to be able to make in the Lord, realize that God will start you off with small baby steps to get this process worked into your life. Rome was not built overnight, and neither will your sanctification in the Lord.

Many in our society have no drawing towards the spiritual things of God. Their only goal in this life is to get as much of the material things in this life as they possibly can, not really caring who they hurt and run over in the process.



Many think that trying to become more holy in the Lord is “corny.” Many of these types of Christians have been labeled as being “not cool” and “goody two shoes” by their peers, by their classmates, or by some of their fellow workers in the workplace. Many of our teenagers are made fun of in their schools if they do not join the crowds in abusing alcohol, doing drugs, or engaging in premarital sex.

***The ways of our God are not the ways of this world! This is why God tells us that we will become His enemies if we ever become too friendly with the things and ways of this world. This is why God is calling us and separating us unto Himself in this sanctification process that He wants to start with each and everyone of us.***

***To become more holy and more righteous in the Lord may not be cool with the rest of the world, but it is definitely cool with the Lord. And when everything is all finally said and done, and we have finally departed from this life and have to face God for our own personal judgments – the only thing that will really matter is what God thinks, not what the world thinks. We will all be judged by how God views things, not how the world or other people view things.***

I will leave you with one last thought before going into the actual Scripture verses on this topic: If you really watch and study people – what is the one thing that most people are really searching for and seeking after these days?

Why is it that so many people are tempted to enter a life of drugs or alcohol abuse? Why are so many people committing adultery behind their spouse’s back? Why are so many business-minded people chasing after their one and only all-personal god – the almighty dollar? Why are so many people engaging with other alternative forms of spirituality, such as delving into the occult and the many facets of the New Age movement?

If you really bottom-line all of the seeking that is occurring in these areas – they are all looking for one thing – and that one thing is an incredible sense of **well-being**. They are all looking for that “**high**” that will make them “**feel good.**”

To those who are seeking after the almighty dollar, they are looking for that high that will give them a sense of approval and a sense of accomplishment. They are looking for all the material things that this money can buy them, thinking that all of these material things will make them feel good on the inside and completely fill the emptiness and void that is on the inside of each one of them.

To those chasing after drugs, alcohol, or illicit sexual encounters – they are looking for immediate gratification of physical, mental, or sexual pleasures. They want to feel good right now, and they will do anything they can to try and get that next high.

However, as we all know, all of the free sex, drugs, and alcohol, and all of the money in this world, and all of the material things this money can buy us, will never buy us that true state of inner happiness, that true state of well-being that we are all really searching for.

All of the material things that we can buy in this life will only keep us high for a very short period of time. Then once that high starts to wear off, we have to find something else we can buy, thinking that the next new purchase will make us feel good for a longer period of time. And then it happens again. That high starts to wane, and then we are once more looking for that next new material thing, that next new adventure that will make us feel good about ourselves.

Many people are constantly chasing the wind, but never really being able to reach it or grab a hold of it – thus always continuing to fall short of being able to reach that elusive state of well-being that will give them the [love](#), joy, and peace they are really searching for.

Even many Christians are missing the mark on all of this. Too many Christians have become more attached to the things of this world rather than to God and the things that He wants us to get involved in. As a result, there are many Christians who are not happy and no more fulfilled with their lives than many nonbelievers are.

Once you become saved and born again by accepting Jesus as your personal Lord and Savior – this is just the beginning. Now God wants to start to build you up in Him and all of His ways for your life.

The first thing that God will want you to do is to be willing to enter into a full surrender with Him so He can then set you up on the divine path that He will want you to follow in this life. The next thing God will want from you is that you attempt to establish a close personal relationship with Him.

However, this will now lead us right into the next big step. Many Christians have already done both of these things, but they still feel there is something missing in their lives.

They are following God's perfect will and plan for their lives. They know how to be led by the Holy Spirit on a daily basis to accomplish what needs to be accomplished. They have established very good personal relationships with the Lord – but yet there still seems to be something missing in their lives and they cannot seem put their finger on it.

4. **Where is that feeling of well-being that I should be having more of?**
5. **Where is that love, joy, and peace of mind I should be having more of?**
6. **Why is it that at times I am no more happier and no more fulfilled than many nonbelievers are?**

***I personally believe that the missing ingredient in many believer's life is this sanctification process. This sanctification process is a deeper work in the Lord, and many have not entered into it either because they have never been shown how to properly enter into it, or they really do not want to go this far with the Lord.***

Once you enter into this sanctification process with the Lord, it can be a bit painful at times, since God will be working with you to fully expose and prune out all of the negative qualities that He will not want have operating in your personality.

I will be doing additional articles in the Sanctification Section of our site, giving you all of the main verses that will give you the specifics on what it is you should be seeking after in order to be able to work with the Lord in this sanctification process. As you will see in some of the verses listed below, it is the Holy Spirit who will really be the One to sanctify you and help you to become more holy in the eyes of the Lord.

However, you will still have to do your part in all of this. As I said in another article in this section titled, "[Mindset: Being Transformed by the Renewing of Your Mind,](#)" you will have to be the one to attempt to "**put on**" the positive qualities that God will want to instill in your personality, and "**put away**" all of the negative qualities that He will not want operating in your personality.

You will have to really work with the Holy Spirit in order to be able to get God to move you into this deeper realm of making you to become more holy. But for those of you who are willing to let the Lord take this next extra step with you – you will find and obtain what everyone is really searching for and cannot find these days – an incredible sense of well-being that all of the money, material possessions, drugs, alcohol, and sex will never be able to bring you in this life.

This incredible sense of well-being can only be found in the process of allowing God to work His very divine nature into your own personality, thereby making you to become more holy. A perfect example of this is the 9 [fruits of the Holy Spirit](#). These 9 fruits are His fruits, not ours – such as love, joy, peace, self-control, kindness, etc.

This means that God will start to transmit and impart His love, His peace, and His kindness into our personalities. And once this kind of sanctification process starts to occur, this is when you will really be able to feel and experience the sense of well-being that God initially created all of us to have in Him.

***It is only when the very life of God Himself, through the Holy Spirit, starts to enter into your mind, soul, and heart will you feel that high that everyone is really looking for these days.***

***And the only way that you can get the very life of God to start to enter into your mind, soul, and heart is by entering into this sanctification process with the Lord. There is no other way. There are no shortcuts to this process. I really believe this is one of the main missing ingredients in many believer's walks with the Lord.***

Now I will go to the actual Scripture verses showing you that God really does want to start this sanctification process with each and everyone of us. I will then end this article giving you a simple 4 step process to get God to move you into this sanctification process if you are not afraid of it and are willing to work with Him on it.

## **1. We Are Now Sanctified in Christ Jesus**

In the above definition from Jack Hayford on sanctification, you will note that he says that sanctification is **"instantaneous before God through Christ,"** but that it is **"progressive before man through obedience to the Holy Spirit and the Word."**

As you will see in the first two Scripture verses I will list below, these verses are telling us that we are now **"sanctified in Christ Jesus,"** and that we now receive sanctification, along with redemption and righteousness, through the blood that Jesus has personally shed for all of us on the cross. This is what Mr. Hayford means by the first part of this definition in that our sanctification is instantaneous before God through Christ.

However, as you will see in several verses I will list in the second caption below, this sanctification is also progressive in nature as far as we are individually concerned. This means we have to go through a progressive process through the Holy Spirit and the Word in order to become more holy and sanctified in the Lord.

What I believe the Lord is trying to tell us in these first two verses is that we have already received His sanctification, like we have already received

His redemption and righteousness as a result of being saved and born again. Here are the two verses:

1. "To the church of God which is at Corinth, to those who are **sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints**, with all who in every place call on the name of Jesus Christ our Lord ..." (1 Corinthians 1:2)
2. "But of Him you are in Christ Jesus, who became for us wisdom from God – **and righteousness and sanctification and redemption** ..." (1 Corinthians 1:30)

To think that God the Father has given us a full redemption and a full pardon for all of our sins – and then to add to this package the process of being able to be sanctified through the power of His Holy Spirit to become the saints that He wants us to become in Him – is enough to knock you right off the couch if you really stop and think what is in these three words:

### **Redemption, Righteousness, and Sanctification!**

And to think that all of this is coming direct from the one and only Almighty God of the entire universe if we are willing to accept His free gift of eternal salvation through His Son Jesus and His sacrificial death on the cross.

It really does not get any better than this – that God and Jesus would go to this type of extreme length to bring us back to Themselves – and then allow us to become partakers in this sanctification process where God the Father can then start to mold, shape, and transform us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ.

## **2. Sanctification is a Progressive Process**

Now here are the two main verses that will show us that becoming sanctified in the Lord is a progressive process. The two key words in both of these verses are "**being sanctified.**"

If we were all instantaneously sanctified at the moment of our conversions with Jesus, then the Bible would not be using these two words of "**being sanctified.**" The word "**being**" is telling us that this is a progressive and ongoing process.

1. "For both He who sanctifies and those who are **being sanctified** are all of one, for which reason He is not ashamed to call them brethren ..." (Hebrews 2:11)

2. "For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are **being sanctified.**" (*Hebrews 10:14*)

Again, with God the Father being willing to open up this sanctification process to each born-again believer – this is really an incredible privilege and the highest of all blessings that we can receive from the Lord.

### 3. God is Calling All of Us to Sanctification

As you will see in the next set of verses, God is calling all of us to this sanctification in Him. These verses are all very direct and straight-to-the-point. The first verse I will list below is telling us that God wants to sanctify us "**completely**" in all three parts of our being – body, soul, and spirit!

When God uses the word "**completely**" – He is using a maximum intense kind of word. He wants to take us all the way in this realm if we are willing to yield to it and work with Him during the process.

If you really study the wording in all of these verses, you can really feel the importance that God is placing on this sanctification process, and that this is something that He wants all of His children to become a part of, not just a few of His select saints.

1. "Now may the God of peace Himself **sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless** at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ." (*1 Thessalonians 5:23*)
2. "... **but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct, because it is written, "Be holy, for I am holy."** (*1 Peter 1:15*)
3. "**For this is the will of God, your sanctification:** that you should abstain from sexual immorality; **that each of you should know how to possess his own vessel in sanctification and honor**, not in passion of lust, like the Gentiles who do not know God ... **For God did not call us to uncleanness, but in holiness.**" (*1 Thessalonians 4:3,7*)
4. "Therefore, having these promises, beloved, **let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.**" (*2 Corinthians 7:1*)
5. "But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and silver, but also of wood and *clay*, some for honor and some for dishonor. **Therefore if anyone cleanses himself from the**

**latter, he will be a vessel for honor, sanctified and useful for the Master, prepared for every good work.” (2 Timothy 2:20)**

6. **“Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.” (Matthew 5:48)**
7. **“I speak in human terms because of the weakness of your flesh. For just as you presented your members as slaves of uncleanness, and of lawlessness leading to more lawlessness, *so now present your members as slaves of righteousness for holiness* ... What fruit did you have then in the things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of those things is death. **But now having been set free from sin, and having become slaves of God, you have your fruit to holiness**, and the end, everlasting life.” (Romans 6:19-22)**

When you first read the way these verses are worded, it is very easy to become dismayed and distraught. If you are really honest with yourself, you can really feel and sense how far of a gap there is between where you are at right now with the Lord in your present level of spiritual development and how far God would really like to take you in this realm.

Many Christians, when they first read these kinds of verses, realize they are simply too far away from this type of holiness in their present state of spiritual development and they thus throw in the towel – never even attempting to give God a chance to start this sanctification process through them in this life.

This will now lead us into the next section. These next set of verses will tell you exactly how God can get this sanctification process started in your life right in the middle of wherever your present level of spiritual development may be in Him – no matter how bad you think it may be.

#### **4. Sanctification is Done By the Word and the Holy Spirit**

Study these next set of verses very, very carefully. Trying to achieve the state of holiness that God the Father would like to bring us up into is completely impossible if we try to do it through our own flesh and through our own efforts.

Many Christians are trying to achieve this state of holiness without the presence and power of the Holy Spirit helping them out. You can easily spot those who are being properly sanctified through the Holy Spirit and those who are not.

The ones who are trying to achieve this sanctification out of their own efforts and out of their own flesh do not appear to be genuine. Their acts of holiness do not appear to be coming from the heart. You get the sense they are just trying to put on a show. There just seems to be something fake and plastic about them and the way they operate. Even most nonbelievers can see right through them. There is a sense of false piety about them that does not seem to ring true.

However, with the person who is being properly sanctified by the Holy Spirit, you can really tell there is something different about this type of person. This person does not flaunt his piety, goodness, or holiness. They are very humble about it. Everything they do comes from the heart and everything appears to be done very naturally. There is no pretentiousness or sense of false piety in their actions or attitudes.

This sense of real holiness they are projecting through their personalities literally has a drawing power to it. You find yourself gravitating to these types of people. You can almost sense or see a radiance or glow about them. The love of God just radiates from their countenance. You are very comfortable in being in their presence and talking with them. You can see that their holiness is genuine and that it really is coming from the heart of God Himself.

***This is why these next set of verses are so specific on how this sanctification process is done in the Lord. Bottom line – sanctification in the Lord is done by the power of the Holy Spirit operating through the knowledge that the Word will give you. In other words – it is the Word and the Spirit working together that will cause this sanctification process to begin and occur in your life.***

***It really is the Holy Spirit who will be the One to cause this type of transformation to occur in your personality. However, the Holy Spirit will not work without the Word. Why? Because the Word of God will give you the knowledge that you will need in order to be able to work with the Holy Spirit in this process. You have to know exactly what it is that God wants to change about you before the Holy Spirit will move to cause some of these changes to start to take place in your personality.***

Example – you have to learn from the Bible what some of the specific qualities are that God will want to impart into your personality. A good example of this are the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit.

The Bible will tell you exactly what these nine fruits are. Then once you know exactly what they are, then you can start to work with the Holy Spirit to get more of these fruits manifested and imparted into your



personality. But if you do not learn exactly what these specific fruits are to begin with by reading about them from the Bible, then the Holy Spirit will have nothing to work with and He thus may not do much with you in this realm.

All Christians have the Holy Spirit living on the inside of them. The Holy Spirit is only too anxious to get the ball rolling with you in every area of your life where you may need His help on, especially in the area of being sanctified in the Lord. However, many Christians have not spent much time in the Word and they are thus lacking the **"working knowledge"** they will need to work with the Holy Spirit in this deeper realm. As a result, there is very little, if any true spiritual growth over the course of most of their lives.

As you can tell by the way these verses are worded, this sanctification realm is for the real seekers. The real seekers will be diving into God and His Word to find out exactly what it is God wants to do with them, and then will only be too anxious to work with the Holy Spirit during this process – having no fear of doing it, and being willing to fully submit to the Lord with how He wants to handle all of it.

These verses in particular are giving you the **"key"** that will open up this door of sanctification to come into your life and change it forever.

7. "And such were some of you. But you were washed, **but you were sanctified**, but you were justified in the name of the Lord Jesus and **by the Spirit of our God.**" (1 Corinthians 6:11)
8. "**But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord.**" (2 Corinthians 3:18)
9. "... elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, **in sanctification of the Spirit**, for obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: grace to you and peace be multiplied." (1 Peter 1:2)
10. "For if you live according to the flesh you will die; **but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body**, you will live." (Romans 8:13)
11. "Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for it, **that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word**, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot

or wrinkle or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish." (*Ephesians 5:25*)

12. **"Since you have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit** in sincere love of the brethren, love one another fervently with a pure heart, having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever ... " (*1 Peter 1:22*)

Notice in the last verse it says that your soul can become purified by **"obeying the truth through the Spirit."** You can only get God's truth in you if you read His Word. Learn the truth by studying the Word of God, and then combine this with walking in the power of the Holy Spirit, and then your soul can become purified.

The verse right above it says that Jesus can cleanse and sanctify His church, which are the individual body of believers, by the **"washing of water by the word."** In other words, you can be washed clean by His Word if you are willing to soak into the Scripture verses like you would soak in a bath of water to clean off. The Word of God has that kind of power in it!

The truth from God can set you free in many areas of your life – but you first have to learn what those truths are before they can start to work to set you free. And the only way to find the spiritual truths that will change the quality of your life and help set you free is by reading and studying from the Bible. There is no other way!

***The first 5 verses specifically tell us it is by the Holy Spirit Himself that this sanctification process is done in your life. Put all of these verses together, and God the Father is telling you exactly how this sanctification process can be done in this life – and that is by the power of the Holy Spirit operating through the knowledge that the Word will give you.***

***In other words, it's the Word and the Holy Spirit working together in a believer, who is actively seeking after God and His Word, that will get God to release the Holy Spirit to start this sanctification process within their mind, body, soul, and spirit.***

## How to Enter Into the Sanctification Process with the Lord

Though all of the above may seem like a tall order in the type of world we live in today, it really isn't. I have personally seen God do a sanctifying work in several people I know, and the changes in these people's personality have been dramatic and powerful. They are no longer the people I used to know. They are now true saints in every sense of the word.

The Holy Spirit is powerful and He is God Almighty Himself. Once You see Him really get a hold of a believer, and then start this sanctifying work in them to make them to become more holy and Christ-like in their souls and personalities – it is truly an incredible sight to behold! In my opinion, this is even more miraculous than watching Him heal someone of a physical ailment or disease.

***To those of you who would like to tread into this type of deeper waters with the Lord, but are somewhat fearful of what He may do with you – the one thing that I can personally tell you is that you can completely trust God the Father to begin this work in you. He knows you better than you can ever know yourself. Since God is totally and completely perfect in His very nature and personality, then this means He will know how to perfectly handle you with this sanctification process.***

I will end this article with a very simple 4 step process that will lead you into this sanctification realm if you decide you want to give God a full and solid green light to start this process within you. However, what I cannot give you is exactly what God will be personally doing with each and everyone of you once this sanctification process starts up.

Everyone is operating at different levels of spiritual development with the Lord. Some people have more baggage to clean up than others. Some people will be more resistant to the Holy Spirit wanting to remove certain negative qualities than others will. Some will progress at a faster rate of speed than others will because they will be more honest with the Lord and will be more open to receiving revelation on exactly what it is God wants to put in them and exactly what it is He wants to take out of them.

This sanctification is a process. It is not something that will done overnight. You can trust God to perfectly handle the time frame in which He wants to operate in. He will not overwhelm you. He will give you plenty of reasonable time to work with the Holy Spirit once the Holy Spirit

starts to impart revelation and knowledge to you on exactly what it is He wants to come after.

For those of you who would really like to get serious with the Lord on getting this sanctification process started in your life – here is a very simple 4 step process that will get you in if you decide you want to take the plunge.

## **1. Decide If You Really Want It**

The first thing you will need to do is to make a personal decision as to whether or not you really want to enter into this sanctification realm with the Lord. Many Christians really do not want God to do any type of sanctifying work in their lives. The reason for this is that they know He will be coming after some of their vices and character flaws, and they simply are not willing to give up some of these vices, or attempt to try and work with Him to change certain parts of their personalities.

So the first thing you will have to do is to make a personal decision as to whether or not you really want the Lord to begin this type of deeper work in your life. This is not something that you can go halfway with Him on. This is an all-or-nothing decision.

You are either going to go all the way with the Lord once He begins to do it with you or you are not. You cannot straddle the fence post with Him on this process. If you do, then the Holy Spirit is not going to move with full force to help get you cleaned up and sanctified to the degree that God would really like to get you to in this life.

Once the Lord starts to move into certain areas of your life and personality, then you are going to have to be willing to fully work with Him on it or nothing is going to get accomplished. He has to have your full consent on all of this. God really respects your free will and He will not run against it.

If you decide you want to give the Lord a full and solid green light to begin this type of deeper work in your life after really thinking and chewing on the ramifications on what this type of deeper progressive work will entail, then you will now be ready for step 2.

## **2. Ask God the Father to Begin the Sanctification Process**

To get God to start to move you into this sanctification realm will only require one thing – and that one thing is that you go before the Lord in serious and heartfelt prayer, and ask Him to start this sanctification

process in your life through the power of the Holy Spirit. It really is that simple.

The Bible says to ask – and **then** you will receive. The Bible also says you have not because you ask not. In other words, all you simply have to do is ask God the Father in prayer to start this sanctification process and tell Him that you will now be willing to work with both Him and the Holy Spirit once it starts up.

Once you put this initial request on His altar, I would keep reminding the Lord to keep this sanctification process going for the rest of your life at least once or twice a year for the rest of your life. By reminding God to keep this sanctification process going on for the rest of your life, you are showing Him that you mean serious business with Him, and that you want the Holy Spirit to keep working with you in this realm as long as you are walking and breathing in this physical body. The show never stops with the Lord, and He will take you as far as you will want to go with Him in this realm.

For those of you who would like a good sample prayer to go before God the Father to get Him to start this sanctification process in your life, here is a very good sample prayer you can use:

**"Father,**

***In the name of Your Son Jesus Christ, I now approach Your throne with a very special request. Your Word tells me that You want to completely sanctify me through the special workings of the Holy Spirit. Your Word tells me that You want to shape, mold, and transform me into the express image of Your Son Jesus Christ. Father, I now want to work in cooperation and in partnership with both You and the Holy Spirit to begin this deeper sanctifying work in my life.***

***Father, I now ask that You begin to completely sanctify me in both my body, my soul, and my spirit. I now give You a full and solid green light to begin this sanctification process in my life. Father, I now ask that You hold nothing back once You begin this sanctifying work in me and my life. I will now be willing to work with both You and the Holy Spirit in any area of my life and in any area of my personality that You feel needs to be cleaned up, sanctified, and made more holy.***

***Father, I now have full faith and belief that You will honor this request and will begin this sanctification process in my life in the way and manner You deem most appropriate at the level of spiritual development that I am currently operating at with You.***

***Thank You Father.  
Thank You Jesus.  
Thank You Holy Spirit.”***

This would be the basic gist of wording this type of prayer for those of you who may have a hard time in wording some of your specific prayers to the Lord. If you can truly approach God with this type of prayer, and you are really meaning it from your mind and your heart – then God will hear you loud and clear, and He will then begin to start this sanctification process in your life right where you are standing at the moment this request is put before Him.

### **3. Study the Word For the Knowledge That You Will Need**

If you are willing to give God a full and solid green light in which to start this sanctification process in your life – then there are now two things you must be willing to do on your end to get this sanctification process moving into full gear. You will not be a passive robot in all of this, expecting God to do all of the work for you. He will need you to do your part in all of this. This will now lead us into the last two parts that will complete what you will need to know in order to be able to work in cooperation with the Lord on all of this.

Your first part will be to study the Word on some type of regular and frequent basis. As some of the above Scripture verses have stated, it is the combination of the Holy Spirit working with the Word and the knowledge that the Word will give you that will cause this sanctification process to move into high gear in your life.

***As I stated at the top of this article, you have to have the actual knowledge on exactly what it is God wants to change about you. And the only way you can get this knowledge is by reading and studying from the Bible.***

***Study and pull from the Bible exactly what it is that God wants to impart into your personality, and exactly what it is He wants to take out of your personality that is not pleasing to Him – and then the Holy Spirit will start to move into those specific areas to help get you cleaned up and sanctified.***

It's the Word and the Spirit working in conjunction with one another that will take you on this road to holiness in the Lord. However, your part is to get into the Word. The Holy Spirit cannot do this part for you. Many Christians do not spend much time in the Bible and this is one of the main reasons why there is not much spiritual growth occurring in their lives.

The Holy Spirit will personally guide you in this life as to how often and how frequently you will need to read from the Bible. You do not want to get into legalism and ritualism with how often and how much time you will spend in the Word. God Himself will personally guide you in all of this. Just realize that God will be wanting you to spend kind of regular quality time during the course of your life in reading from His Word, and trying to understand and assimilate what you are reading as best you can.

The subsequent articles that we will have listed in the Sanctification Section of our site will be giving you many of the appropriate Scripture verses pertaining to your sanctification and exactly what it is God wants to impart into your personality and exactly what it is He wants to take out of your personality.

#### **4. Work in Cooperation With the Holy Spirit During This Process**

The last and final part to really being able to get this sanctification process started in your life is your willingness and eagerness to work very closely with the Holy Spirit once He starts to move in on you and let you know exactly what it is He wants to do. Here are a few examples of what you may expect from Him.

The apostle Paul says that God wants to sanctify you completely – body, soul, and spirit. Do not be surprised if one of the things that the Holy Spirit will move in on is any particular vices you may have that could be harming your physical body. Good examples of this would be smoking cigarettes, smoking pot, abusing alcohol, and overeating on the wrong kinds of foods.

Many Christians are addicted to smoking cigarettes. I have seen God move on quite a few of them on this particular vice. Some of them have been successful in kicking the habit, and others have not. The power of the Holy Spirit is there to help break this addiction off you, but you have to really want to have this vice removed before God will move in to break this addiction off you.

Some people really do not want to give this up for the Lord. When that happens, God will respect your free will on the matter and back off. However, I have seen Him come back in waves on that person, and every so often He keeps coming back and knocking on their doors, letting them know once more that He would really like to have this addiction removed from their lifestyle.

The same goes for those Christians who still like to smoke their pot. I have discovered there is some slack with the Lord on the cigarette thing, but there is much less slack with Him on the pot issue! Every Christian

who I have known that has smoked pot, and then really came into a full surrender with the Lord, have all had the pot taken out of their lives very quickly.

Bottom line – God will be letting you know very early on which of these vices He would like to have removed from your personality and lifestyle. His divine power is there to help break these addictions off your back, but you will have to be the one to make this personal decision for yourself as to whether or not you will work in cooperation with the Holy Spirit to take these addictions out of your life for good.

I have seen God break many of these types of addictions off people and they did not have to go through any type of physical withdrawal during the weaning off process. God, through the power of the Holy Spirit operating on the inside of you, has the full power to be able to set you completely free from any vices or addictions you may have. There is nothing that the power of God cannot totally defeat and overcome if you are willing to allow God to work with you in these areas.

Other areas of your life that God may want to move in on are some of your attitudes. If you are holding any unforgiveness towards others for things they may have done to you in your past – expect God to move in very strongly to try and get you to forgive these people and to let all of the wrongs they may have ever done to you into His hands. Vengeance and payback in this life belong to the Lord, not to you or anyone else! God will be righting all the wrongs ever done to you in this life. Your job is to forgive all of those who have ever hurt or wronged you and get on with the rest of your life.

If you are operating in any type of a judgmental, critical, controlling, or manipulating spirit – expect the Lord to deal very heavily with you on these issues. These kinds of attitudes and behaviors are poisonous and toxic to all of those who come in contact with them. They are all unacceptable in the eyes of God, and the Holy Spirit will be moving very strongly on you with conviction and insight to tackle these kinds of attitudes and behaviors.

Bottom line – God, through the power of the Holy Spirit, will be letting you know very clearly what good, positive, and godly qualities He will want to try and **“put on”** into your personality, and what negative qualities and vices He will want to try and **“put away.”** Once all of this knowledge and information has been given to you by the Lord, then it will be up to you as to whether or not you will want to work in cooperation with the Holy Spirit to get all of this accomplished.

If you are willing to work with the Lord in the specific areas that He will target – then the Holy Spirit will start to do the miraculous and supernatural work of removing all of the bad things that He will not want



operating in your personality and life, and then impart all of the positive and godly things that He will want have operating in your personality and life. And once this starts to happen, God the Father will then start to transmit and impart part of His divine nature and personality right up into your mind, soul, and spirit.

God's love, joy, peace, patience, boldness, goodness, gentleness, and kindness will all start to move up and mesh into your personality, thereby increasing your ability to be able to walk, live, and operate in these saintly and godly qualities.

***When this starts to happen, you will have officially entered into a true, progressive, sanctified state – where the very life of God Himself will now be flowing through you and out of you so that you can reach others with His message of eternal salvation, and His message on how to properly live this life the way He wants His people to live it.***

***The Bible tells us that God wants us to become fishers of men for Him. You can become a much better fisherman, representative, and ambassador for the Lord if you are willing to allow Him to lead you into this sanctification process. Nothing will draw others to the Lord more than a Spirit-filled, anointed, and truly sanctified saint who has the fruits and qualities of the Holy Spirit operating through their personality.***

This sanctification process is available to every single born-again believer. However, it is up to each and every Christian to make this personal decision for themselves. This is something that the Lord will not force on anyone due to the individual cooperation that is needed from each person to really get this process started.

## Conclusion

I will leave you with one last thought on all of this. True holiness is God's ultimate and highest aim for all of us. Getting saved and born again is just the beginning. Once you are saved, God expects you to spiritually grow and mature in your personal walk with Him.

***After studying the Bible from cover to cover – I believe one of the main secrets that is jumping out loud and clear is that God and Jesus are calling us unto Themselves to become a partaker of Their own divine holiness. They are calling us out to become separate from the world and the corrupt ways of this world.***

***As a result of Jesus personally dying on the cross for each and everyone of us, we now have direct access to the throne of God the Father Himself. As a result of this direct access we now have with God the Father, we not only get to pray and communicate directly with Him, but we also get an open invitation to become partakers of this sanctification process where He can start to work, mold, change, and transform us into the express image of His one and only Son Jesus Christ.***

***God is holy – and He is calling each and everyone of us into His very holiness. God Himself can start to transmit and impart, through the Holy Spirit, some of His very own divine attributes and personality qualities right up into the middle of our own souls and personalities if we are willing to enter into this sanctification process with Him.***

To those of you who would really like to try and achieve any true sainthood in this life with the Lord – this progressive, sanctification process is what will lead you in. This path and journey to holiness in the Lord is there for all who are willing to step into it and are not afraid to work with the Holy Spirit in the directions that He will want to take them in.

To those of you who are willing to take this dive into these deeper waters with the Lord, I guarantee you will find the most incredible state of well-being that you will never find in any of the material things or pursuits of this world.

## God is the Potter, We are the Clay

One of the most powerful analogies in the Bible regarding our transformation and [sanctification](#) in the Lord has to be the analogy of the potter and the clay. The Bible says that God is the Potter and we are the clay. It is up to God to mold, transform, and sanctify us as we journey through this earthly life.

Whenever God gives us a specific analogy in the Bible, this means that we have to seek into the revelation of that analogy in order to pick up what He is trying to tell us with the analogy. If we do, then we will see exactly what God is trying to tell us in reference to the actual analogy itself. In other words, we have to find exactly how pottery is made if we want to fully understand what God is trying to tell us in this most incredible analogy.

Here is the key verse from Scripture that will give us this specific revelation that God is the Potter and we are His clay:

***"But now, O Lord, You are our Father; we are the clay, and You our potter; and all we are the work of Your hand."  
(Isaiah 64:8)***

I have never made pottery myself, so I had no idea how it was actually made. But I always had a feeling that God would somehow bring someone along that would show and demonstrate how this process is actually done so we can see exactly how this analogy fits into what God wants to do with each one of us in our own personal growth in Him.

I recently received a DVD from a friend who had a pastor by the name of Pat Lazovich come to their church. Pat used to make pottery before God called him into full time ministry work. As a result of his previous experience in actually making pottery, God now has him traveling to different churches, giving real live demonstrations on exactly how pottery is made, and then how this analogy perfectly fits in and lines up with how God wants to mold, shape, and transform all of us in our personal growth in Him.

I reviewed the entire DVD, and his demonstration and explanation of this analogy was excellent. I cannot recommend this man highly enough with his demonstration on the potter and the clay. If any of you would like to have him come to your church to do this demonstration for you, he is the senior pastor of Calvary Chapel in Sierra Vista, AZ.

In this article, I will give you the main steps on exactly how pottery is made, and then the appropriate explanations on how all of this fits into the analogy that God is the Potter and we are His clay.

Grab a hold of this very powerful revelation, because it will both visually and dramatically show you not only how God molds and transforms us in this life, but exactly why He does some of the things He does with us in this molding process, as this process can be quite painful and unpleasant at times.

I will break down the main steps on how pottery is actually made, along with the appropriate explanations as to how all of this perfectly fits into God's actual sanctification with us under the specific captions below.

## 1. God Needs the Word in Us Before He Can Start the Sanctification Process

The first thing Pat will show you is the lump of clay that he will actually use to make the piece of pottery he is looking to make. Before Pat can put this piece of clay on an electric wheel to start the actual molding process to make the kind of pottery he wants to make, he first has to add enough **WATER** into it in order to make it pliable and soft enough for him to be able to actually use it. If he does not add enough water into the clay, the clay will remain too hard and rigid for him to be able to actually use.

When the water is added into the clay, it makes the clay soft and pliable. If the clay is not soft and pliable enough, the potter cannot begin to use it to make the pottery he wants to make. The analogy for us to pick up on this first step is that the water used in this process represents the Word of God.

Here is a good verse giving us the actual revelation that the word "**water**" in the Bible is symbolic of the Word of God. In other words, the Word of God is like water to our souls. Just like our physical bodies need water in order to be able to live and survive in this world, in the same way our souls need God's Word flowing through us in order to feed us on the inside in our inner man.

"... that He might **sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word**, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish." (Ephesians 5:26)

What this is telling us is that God cannot even begin to mold and transform us in this life unless we are first willing do our part. And our

part has to be to get into His Word and try to read, understand, and assimilate what is in the Bible as best we can, with the Holy Spirit also helping us to understand what we are actually reading.

***The Bible says that we are to grow in the knowledge of God, and one of the main ways that you will grow in the knowledge of God is to read from the one Book that will give you this direct knowledge – the Bible! There is no other way into the knowledge of God other than through the Bible.***

***If you do not spend enough reasonable time in this life trying to read from the Bible and assimilate the actual knowledge that is in this Book as best you can, then God will have very little to work with in your own personal growth with Him, and you will see very little, if any actual spiritual growth in Him in this life.***

***The reason why so many of God's saints are not spiritually growing in this life and being properly sanctified in the Holy Spirit is because they are not spending enough time trying to read and understand the Bible as best they can, and then see how the actual knowledge in this Book can be implemented into their daily lives.***

***The Holy Spirit needs something to work with in order to get this growth process kicked into full gear – and that something is knowledge – and that knowledge can only be gained by reading the Bible. There is no other way!***

***Just as the potter cannot use the clay unless there is enough water added into it – in the same way God cannot start the sanctification process in our lives unless we first start to get enough of the Word in us. The Word cannot start to effectively work in you and your life unless you first start to attempt to get it into you in the first place.***

So without question, the very first step you have to take, if you really want God to mold and shape you into the kind of person He really wants you to become in Him in this life, is to spend enough reasonable time in the Word – trying to understand, with the help of the Holy Spirit, all of the knowledge that is contained in it, and exactly how all of this knowledge can be incorporated into your personal life and walk with the Lord.

## 2. You Have to Be Properly “Centered” in Jesus Christ

After Pat adds enough water into the clay to make it soft and pliable so he can now start to work with it – the next thing he will do is put the piece of clay in the **center** of an electric wheel. This wheel will then start to spin so he can then use his hands to start the molding and shaping process with the clay as it is actually spinning on the wheel.

However, if the piece of clay is not **properly centered** in the middle of the wheel, then he will not be able to work with it, and he will not be able to make the pottery he wants to make.

Pat said having the lump of clay **perfectly centered** in the middle of the electric wheel is the first step in being able to actually make a piece of pottery. If he tries to make a piece of pottery with a lump of clay that is not properly centered in the middle of the wheel, it will eventually tear apart before he can finish the process.

In the same way that the clay has to be properly centered in the middle of the wheel before the potter can even begin to mold and shape it – we have to be properly centered in Jesus Christ before God can start to mold and shape us.

So what does it mean to be properly centered in Jesus? I believe what it means to be properly centered in Jesus is that you have to be under a complete and full surrender of you and your entire life with Him where He is now in full control of your entire life. Jesus has to become both Lord and Savior in your life, not just your Savior. Too many Christians do not have Jesus as the real Lord in their lives.

Again, this is all fully explained to you in our article titled, “The Full Surrender” in the Bible Basics section of our site. In this article we give you all of the main verses from Scripture to show you exactly what this full surrender is all about, along with a good full surrender prayer that will actually get you into this realm with the Lord.

***Bottom line – you have to enter into God’s perfect will for your life before He will start to guide both you and your life in the direction that He will want to take it in. God will not fully guide you to your divine destiny in Him, and fully sanctify you to the degree that He would really like in this life unless you first come into this full surrender with Him. It’s your all for His all.***

Just like the potter cannot mold the piece of clay into the piece of pottery that he is trying to make unless it is **perfectly centered** in the middle of the wheel – in the same way the Lord cannot begin to properly work with us in this life unless we are **perfectly centered** in Him in this full surrender.

Pat actually shows this with a piece of clay. With it not being properly centered in the middle of the wheel, he gets it about halfway to where it needs to go and then all of a sudden it rips and tears apart from the wheel – all because it was not perfectly centered in the middle of the wheel in the first place.

In the same way, if we try to live our lives without Jesus leading and guiding the way, our lives will eventually fall apart and we will never reach and fulfill the divine destiny to which God has called each one of us in this life. This is why Jesus tells us in His Word that without Him we can do absolutely nothing in this life – and that if we try to build our own houses in this life without His direct guidance, that we will end up laboring **“in vain”** if we try to do it all through our own efforts and wisdom.

Here is the verse that will give us this specific piece of revelation:

**“Unless the Lord builds the house, they labor in vain who build it.” (Psalm 127:1)**

### **3. Sanctification is a Slow, Steady, and Progressive Process**

The next thing that Pat points out is how “slow” and “steady” the electric wheel turns as he is using his hands to mold the pot. He explains that to get the lump of clay to the pot he wants to make, that the wheel has to turn at this slow and steady pace. If he speeds up the wheel to any faster degree, the lump of clay will again tear completely apart before he can make it to the finish line.

In the same way, we have to have patience with the Lord on how He wants to work and build our lives up in Him. In our fast-paced, self-centered world, we are use to instant everything. But in God’s realm, He usually works things out in a much slower time frame than we are used too. And if we do not learn how to go with His slower flows and time frames, we could end up getting very frustrated and impatient, and then eventually end up losing our peace and joy in Him, not to mention our possible calls in Him.

Just as a teenager will get stretch marks on their skins if they grow too fast during puberty, in the same way we have to let God build us up in

Him in this slow and steady manner. If we try to push the envelope too far and too fast with Him, different parts of our lives could totally unravel and fall apart.

Not waiting on God's timing on who you should be marrying in this life could cause you to marry the wrong person in this life. Not waiting on the next new job you should be taking could cause you to take a major wrong turn in the divine destiny that God already has planned out for your life, and it could then end up costing you years of wasted and unproductive time, if not completely cause you to lose your entire call in Him all together.

Just as a good potter has to take his time when molding and forming out this piece of pottery as it is spinning on the wheel – in the same way God has to mold, shape, and transform all of us in this same, slow, and steady manner. This is why one of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit is the fruit of patience. We all need the patience of the Holy Spirit operating in us to help keep us in God's timing with how He wants to work things out in our lives, especially in the fast-paced world in which we all live in.

#### **4. God's Hand Will Personally Mold, Shape, and Transform You**

The next thing you need to grab a hold of in your sanctification in the Lord, is that it is literally the hand of God Himself, operating through the Holy Spirit on the inside of you, that will supernaturally transform and sanctify you. This is a direct, supernatural work done by the Holy Spirit Himself.

Once Pat has the lump of clay properly centered in the middle of the wheel, and enough water has been added into the clay to make it soft and pliable to work with, then Pat starts the actual molding process with the lump of clay.

What he first does as the lump of clay is spinning on the wheel is to take his hand and push it down on the top of the clay to create an opening in it. Once this opening has been made at the top of the clay, Pat's hand then goes down deep inside the middle of the clay as it is forming out, and he then uses his hands to properly shape the piece of clay as it is building up during this spinning process on the wheel.

Pat's hands are thus working on both the inside and outside of the clay to mold, shape, and transform it into the pot he wants to make as it continues to spin on the wheel. His hands are literally making and forming all of this out with this original shapeless lump of clay. Pat says that he



cannot make a pot unless his hands go down deep in the middle of that pot as it is forming out.

In the same way, God's own hand literally goes down deep into the middle of our souls and spirits where the inner sanctification work is actually done – to mold and transform us into the saints He wants us to become in Him. This is why we have to give God a full, solid, green light to do this type of inner sanctification work in us, as He needs our full cooperation in order to be able to get that deep on the inside of us.

Since God is doing the actual supernatural work on the inside of us, it can become rather painful and unpleasant at times, since He will be removing all of the bad and negative qualities that He will not want us to have operating in our personalities – and at the same time, instilling and imparting all of the good, positive, and godly qualities that He will want us to have.

Pat also has to apply a good amount of **pressure** with his hands as he is molding and shaping this lump of clay. In the same way, God has to apply some **serious pressure** on all of us from time to time in order to get us to change to become the kind of person He wants us to become in Him.

Removing toxic qualities such as pride, arrogance, bad tempers, and lust can all be very painful due to our flesh wanting to keep these negative qualities operating in our personalities. But let God do this inner surgery work in you through the Holy Spirit, and you will eventually be molded and shaped into the godly saint that He is calling you to become in Him – and true joy, happiness, and fulfillment will be all yours in this life.

## **5. Let God Develop You to Your Fullest Potential in This Life**

The next thing Pat will show you is that as his hands start to work with both the inside and outside of the clay, the lump of clay now starts to actually grow as it continues to spin on the wheel. It starts to get bigger and taller.

However, he then all of a sudden stops working the clay, with it being about half-way to where it needs to go. He then points out that we all need to let God take us as far as He will want to take us in this life. He said no one is going to pay for a pot that is only half-done and half-completed.

In the same with the Lord, we should not quit and bail out on Him as we are about half-way up the mountain He is wanting us to climb in our calls and divine destiny in Him. We always need to continue to press on and let

God take us as far as He wants to take us in this life. Too many Christians quit and bail out on the Lord as they are about half-way up the mountain He is asking them to climb for Him. As a result, they never find out how much further they could have gone with God had they just continued to press further on.

Pat says that once you start this process with the Lord, let Him decide how far He wants to take you in this life, and do not be afraid if God really wants to stretch your abilities and horizons in the divine plan that He has already set up for your life.

You only have one chance in the eternal scheme of things to leave your mark in this world in the calling that God has placed on your life. Let God take you as far as He wants to go and you won't ever have to worry about having any second regrets once you leave and depart from this life and enter into heaven for all of eternity. You can leave this life knowing that you have fully accomplished everything that the Lord was wanting you to accomplish for Him if you just stay the course with Him and do not bail out due to fear or laziness.

## 6. God Knows Exactly What He Wants to Do With Your Life

The next thing Pat will point out as he is building this piece of clay into the exact pot he wants to make, is that he knows **exactly** what kind of pot he is going to make before he even starts the process. He knows **exactly** how tall and how wide it will end up being, because he already has a **perfect plan** for the pot before he even begins to sit down to start to work with it.

In the same way, God the Father already has our lives **perfectly planned** out for all of us. He knows **exactly** what He wants us to become in our callings in Him, who we should be marrying in this life, how many children He would like us to have, and exactly how to get to all of these specific milestones so we can make it there safely and in one piece.

Just as the piece of clay needs to fully trust the potter to make it into the exact pot he wants to make – in the same way we need to fully trust the Lord to mold, shape, and transform our personalities, along with leading our lives into the specific directions that He will want to take them in.

Since God is all-perfect and all-powerful and we are not – then it only stands to reason that we can **fully trust** God to build the **"house"** of our lives in Him rather than us trying to do it all on our own efforts and wisdom, or the wisdom and efforts of anyone else in our lives.

## **7. Do Not Stretch Beyond the Boundary Lines That God Has Set Up For Your Life**

The next thing Pat will show you is that even though you want to make this pot into what you had originally designed it to be, you need to be very careful that you do not make this pot too tall or too wide and go beyond what your original design and plan for the pot was. If you do, it will tear apart and completely unravel, thereby completely destroying what you were originally wanting to do with the pot in the first place.

In the same way with the Lord – though we are to press on and go as far as God will be wanting to take us in this life in our specific callings in Him, we also have to realize there is another side to this two-sided coin. We also have to make sure that we do not stretch beyond what God is calling us to do for Him, or stretch into positions that He does not want us going into.

If God is calling you to be an attorney, pastor, or doctor – do not try and stretch into other callings that He does not want you to be going into. If God is calling you to play third base on His team, do not try and stretch into the position of the shortstop or left-fielder.

Stay in the boundary lines that God will be setting up in your life. If you stretch beyond those boundary lines, you will stretch beyond your divine calling and there will thus be no anointing, no protection, and no fruit for you in those other endeavors. God knows exactly how far He wants to take us in this life and we need to respect the boundary lines that He will be setting up for our lives.

Billy Graham was called to be an evangelist and he perfectly stayed in that calling during his entire life. He did not try to be a musician or a pastor. He stayed within the boundary lines that God had initially set up for his life and as a result, he will end up going down as one of the greatest evangelists of all time because of all of the good fruit he has produced for the Lord in that specific calling.

## **8. God's Eyes and Attention Are Always on You**

Another good point that Pat brings up is that his eyes are always on the clay once he starts to work with it. If he takes his eyes and attention off the pot as he is shaping and molding it, he could make a big mistake and damage the pot in the process.

In the same way, once we come into this full surrender with the Lord, God will never take His eyes and attention off you. You will always have His complete and undivided attention, since He is omnipresent and no

respector of persons. God obviously has His eyes on everyone since He is omnipresent, but until you come into that full surrender with Him, He will not start to work and build up your life in the direction that He will want it to go in.

What this means is that you can fully trust God to complete the work that He has begun with you until the day you die and depart from this earth. As a result, you will be able to leave this life with most, if not all of your divine missions fully accomplished for Him as long as you stay the course and do not bail out on Him anywhere along the way.

## **9. God Will Always Be Doing Major Pruning in Your Life**

The last thing that Pat will do is to take a knife and start cutting off any excess clay that has accumulated around the pot as he was molding and shaping it on the spinning wheel. What Pat is doing is smoothing out all of the rough edges so the pot turns out complete and beautiful to the natural eye.

In the same way, God will always be pruning out different things and different qualities that He will not be wanting you to have in this life. God may want to prune out some of the bad and negative friends you are hanging out with due to the negative influences they may be having on you and your spiritual development in Him.

He may also want to prune out some bad habits you may still have on you such as smoking cigarettes or the overeating of the wrong kinds of foods – and He will definitely be pruning out some of the bad and negative qualities you may still have operating in your personality such as some of the ones mentioned above.

Though this cutting and pruning can be very painful at times due to your attachments to some of the above things, just realize that it is always for your own good in the long run, and you will be much better off by going with the Lord on anything that He will want to prune out of your life or out of your personality. Resist God on this pruning and you may never reach to the heights, to the calling, and to the person that He will want you to become in Him in this life.

## **10. Let God Mold You Into the Specific Person He Wants You to Become in Him**

After Pat completes the process of turning this lump of clay into a beautiful piece of pottery, he then makes the comment to let God mold

and shape you into the **specific person** He wants you to become in Him, not what other people want you to become.

You have been created by God to be an **unique person** – unlike any other person that has ever been created and born into this world. Realize that only God can mold and shape you into the **finished person** that He wants you to become in Him.

God, as our Father and Potter, is the only One who has the full knowledge, the full power, and the full means to be able to truly sanctify us to become the beautiful, godly, and righteous saints He is calling all of us to become in Him in this life.

## Conclusion

Watching Pat give a real live demonstration on how pottery is actually made leaves you with a very good visual image in your mind's eye on the analogy of the Potter and the clay. Watching Pat's hands literally take a hard, rigid, and shapeless piece of clay, and then turn it into a beautiful piece of pottery, perfectly lines up with what God wants to do with each one of us in this life.

***Due to the fallen, sinful, and corrupt state that we have all been born into this world with, only God can mold, shape, and transform us into beautiful vessels of honor that will be fit for His use. Sanctification, when truly done by the Lord, is the highest state we should all be striving for in our own personal relationship with the Lord. The Holy Spirit is already on the inside of us ready, waiting, and willing to do this type of inner work on us.***

In the Sanctification Section of our site, we have plenty of good articles giving you more information on what true sanctification in the Lord is all about and how to get this kind of process going with the Lord.

I will end this article by bullet pointing all of the above main pieces of revelation on the Potter and the clay so you can see how powerful and beautiful this analogy really is:

- **God Needs the Word in Us Before He Can Start the Sanctification Process**
- **You Have to be Properly Centered in Jesus Christ (The Full Surrender)**

- **Sanctification is a Slow, Steady, and Progressive Process**
- **God's Hand Will Personally Mold, Shape, and Transform You**
- **Let God Develop You to Your Fullest Potential in This Life**
- **God Knows Exactly What He Wants to Do With Your Life**
- **Do Not Stretch Beyond the Boundary Lines that God Has Set Up For Your Life**
- **God's Eyes and Attention Are Always on You**
- **God Will Always Be Doing Major Pruning in Your Life**
- **Let God Mold You Into the Specific Person He Wants You to Become**

Once again, God the Father is giving all of us an incredible piece of revelation in His Word on this analogy of Him being the Potter and we being His clay.

## Seeking After the Lord With All of Your Heart

There are two main themes that you will see repeated over and over in many of our articles. The first theme is the extreme importance that each and every Christian enter into a full surrender with the Lord so that He can then enter them into His perfect plan and destiny for their lives.

The second main theme that you will see repeated over and over again is the extreme importance that each and every Christian seek to establish a good, close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord.

***When you really stop and think about the big picture and what is really most important in this life, and then study the Bible to see where all of our priorities should be set at in this life – there is one special message and revelation that comes jumping off all the pages of the Bible. This one special message and revelation is that God the Father, His Son Jesus Christ, and His Holy Spirit are looking to establish and make a direct, one-on-one, intimate, personal relationship with each person He has created.***

God knew beforehand that [Adam and Eve](#) were going to blow it in the Garden of Eden. God knew beforehand that every man and woman that would be born after them would all turn out to be unholy sinners in His sight, and that none of us would ever be good enough or righteous enough to be able to enter into His kingdom on any our own good works.

At this point, God could have easily given up on the entire human race after the fall of Adam and Eve, but for some strange reason, He chose not to do so. Why?

When you really stop to think about what unholy sinners we all really are, and how fallen and corrupt our human nature really is, you have to wonder – what does God see in any of us that makes us so redeemable in His sight?

Why would God the Father go to such extreme and painful lengths to bring us all back to Himself by sending down His one and only Son Jesus Christ to our cursed earth to go through the worst and most horrible form of physical death that anyone could have possibly undergone at the time He came down to our world – crucifixion by nails?

***For God the Father to go to such an extreme and painful length to get all of us back to Himself shows us only one***

***possible thing – and that one thing is how much our God really, truly, and unconditionally loves each man and each woman He has ever created.***

***There is no way that God the Father is going to send down and sacrifice His one and only Son on a cross if He did not have some kind of special, maximum intense, passionate, jealous, all-consuming type of fire love for each person He has ever created.***

The fact that God and Jesus would ever allow this kind of scenario to unfold just to be able to save us and bring us back to Themselves is truly a maximum kind of intense and unconditional love that our human minds have a hard time in really being able to fully grasp. This kind of total, complete, unconditional, and perfect love is beyond our ability to fully understand or comprehend, especially in the type of world we live in today.

So why does the Lord have this kind of an intense and passionate love for each one of us since we have all been proven to be such unworthy and unholy sinners in His sight? What exactly does God see in all of us that makes us so redeemable in His sight? God is obviously seeing something in all of us that is making us salvageable in His sight, otherwise He would have never wasted His time sending His Son Jesus down to our earth to save us.

***After studying the Bible from start to finish, I believe there is one main reason why the Lord has gone to such extreme and painful lengths to bring all of us back to Himself – and that one main reason is for intimate fellowship.***

***I believe the main reason that God created the first man and the first woman was for intimate fellowship. And God was not only wanting intimate fellowship with Adam and Eve, but He was also going to want it with every man and woman that would follow after them.***

Though Adam and Eve blew it for every man and woman that would be born after them, God still has not changed His mind from what his original intentions were going to be. God still has this incredible perfect and unconditional love for each one of us, and He has now made a way for all of us to be able to receive that divine love – and that way is through His Son Jesus and the Blood that Jesus has personally shed for each one of us on the cross.

The Blood that Jesus has personally shed for each and everyone of us on the cross now gives us full entrance back into the kingdom of God the Father. Our spiritual relationship with God the Father, which was



completely torn and severed with the first sin of Adam and Eve, has now been fully restored through the Blood of Jesus Christ.

We have now all been made spiritually whole and complete again if we are willing to accept Jesus Christ as our personal Lord and Savior. We have now come full circle again! We have now got back what Adam and Eve lost in their first original paradise. Our spiritual relationship has now been fully restored back with God the Father.

Now that we have come full circle again with God the Father, there is now one more thing that each Christian must decide on in this life.

The veil has now been torn apart between God and us. There are now no more walls, barriers, hindrances, and roadblocks between us and God. There is now nothing but clear and smooth sailing ahead of us as far as our own personal relationship with God is concerned. The Bible tells us that we are now all free to approach the throne of God anytime we want for prayer and intimate communication with complete confidence and boldness.

***God is now waiting with wide and open arms for all of us to approach Him. And what exactly is God waiting for? Intimate fellowship, intimate prayer and communication, intimate dialogue and conversations about anything and everything, and intimate sharing of our most personal, private, and secret thoughts.***

***Bottom line – God is looking for seekers! God is looking for those who will not be afraid to try and establish a one-on-one, personal, on-fire, passionate, intense, and willing to tell-all and share-all love relationship with Him.***

***God is looking for a maximum intense kind of personal relationship with no holds barred. He is looking for on-fire and passionate people who will try and tear into Him, who will try and take a hold of Him, and who will try to understand Him and all of His ways.***

The Scripture verses I will list in this article are the bridge, the key, and the secret to being able to find and make direct contact with the Lord in this lifetime. As result of having the Holy Spirit now residing on the inside of us, we now have a direct link and a direct connection back to both God and Jesus in heaven. We can now all pray, talk, and communicate direct to God and Jesus through the Holy Spirit.

Now that the channels have been completely opened back up between God and us, each Christian must now make a personal choice in this life as to whether or not they want to make an attempt get to know this

awesome and loving God of ours by establishing this kind of deep, close, intimate, personal relationship with Him.

For those of you who would really like to enter into and start to establish this kind of a deeper personal relationship with the Lord, the Scripture verses I will list below will give you the key and secret to being able to really do this in this life. You do not have to wait until you get to heaven to be able to make direct contact with God. You can learn how to establish a good, powerful, personal relationship with the Lord right where you are standing at right now.

***The key and secret to being able to establish this kind of deeper, personal, intimate relationship with the Lord in this life is dependent upon one, simple, little thing – and this one, simple, little thing is that you have to be willing to seek after it!***

The verses below are really spelling and shouting out this secret. Study the specific wording in these verses very carefully. As you will see when you study the wording in these specific verses, God is telling us that we have to be the ones to first initiate making some kind of direct contact with Him!

Seek, and **then** you will find God. Draw near to God, and **then** He will draw near to you. Ask, and **then** you will receive. Knock, and **then** the doors will opened up for you.

In each one of the verses making these profound statements, we have to be the ones to first start out by doing the actual seeking, asking, knocking, and drawing near to God. If we do, these verses are then telling us that God will allow us to **"find Him."** We will be able to make direct contact with both God and Jesus through the Holy Spirit if we show God that we mean serious business with Him by putting in a certain amount of intensity in our seeking of Him.

If there is one personal secret that I have learned in my own personal walk with the Lord in order to try and get Him to become much more active in my daily life – is that I have to be seeker after Him and all of His ways. If you are not willing to put in a certain amount of quality time to seek after the Lord – and then to try and develop an active, dynamic, personal relationship with Him, then you will have very little, if any true spiritual and supernatural activity coming from Him.

The verses below are all showing us that we have to be the ones to try and get the ball rolling with God on this seeking. I believe God is letting us know with the specific wording of these verses is that there is a spiritual law that is in operation in His kingdom – and that spiritual law is the seeking law. Seek after God, and then you will find Him. And the

more that you seek after God, the more you will find of Him and the deeper and stronger your personal relationship will become with Him.

***I believe there is a direct correlation between the quality and intensity of your seeking with the Lord and how much He will interact back with you. The deeper, stronger, and more intense you seek after God – the deeper, stronger, and more intense God will come and seek after you!***

Not only is God telling us in these verses to seek and attempt to draw near to Him, but He is also telling us to seek after Him with **“all of our heart”** and with **“all of our soul.”** Seeking after God with **“all”** of our heart and **“all”** of our soul is showing us that God is wanting us to come after Him with maximum intensity, not with a half-hearted or lukewarm attempt.

This would be no different in how we see professional and amateur athletes compete with one another in the sports games they play. A true professional athlete will give it his best and give it his all every single time he goes out to compete in his particular sport. In the same way, God wants all of us to show Him the same amount of intensity in our own personal relationship with Him and in our own personal seeking of Him and all of His ways.

I know many Christians, when they first read these types of verses, get scared and a bit overwhelmed at the specific wording being used by the Lord. These verses need no fancy interpretation. They mean exactly what they are saying.

God is telling all of us that He wants us to be seeking after Him, drawing near to Him, trying to take a hold of Him, and trying to understand Him and all of His ways. And not only does God want us to initiate and make an attempt to do this type of seeking after Him, but He wants this seeking to be done with maximum effort and maximum intensity.

When many Christians first realize how much intensity God is really looking for in this type of seeking, they realize they are not operating anywhere near this level of intensity with Him, and they then back off never giving God any kind of real chance to help work this kind of intensity in their own personal relationships with Him.

Rome was not built overnight, and neither will your own personal relationship with the Lord. **All God is looking for is that you give Him the best effort you can at your current level of spiritual development with Him.** If you do, then God will more than meet you halfway in this realm.

When two people first meet and start dating, they usually do not fall madly and passionately in love with one another. It usually takes a certain amount of time for this kind of true, passionate, and intense type of love to form out and build up. It's the exact same with God the Father. God does not expect this kind of passionate intensity to be built up overnight. For many, this will be a slow and gradual process, with the Holy Spirit being the One to slowly guide you further and deeper into this realm with God.

Again, seeking after the Lord to try and establish a good, deep, intimate, personal relationship with Him is all part of the sanctification process that God would like to do with each and everyone of us.

Before I give you the verses on this topic, and then end the article with some of the different ways that you can seek after the Lord in this lifetime, I first want to make one more statement so you can fully grasp the importance and the incredible profound reality that we are dealing with – in that the one and only God of this entire universe is looking to make and establish a direct, one-on-one, personal relationship with each person He has ever created.

We are dealing with only one God – but one God in three separate and complete Persons – God the Father, His Son Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit. All Three of Them want more than anything else in this world to be able to make direct contact with you so They can then start to establish and create this unique, special, one-of-a-kind, personal relationship direct with only you.

As I stated in my article titled, "God is No Respector of Persons," God the Father has an equal and unconditional love for each person He has ever created. The Bible tells us that God shows no personal favoritism to any man or woman He has ever created. What this means is that we are all equal in the eyes of God. We are all on an equal footing with the Lord. He loves you just as much as He loves anyone else in this life.

What this means is that you can establish and develop just as much of a special, deep, personal relationship with God as anyone else can. God will give you just as much time, attention, effort, and intensity as He would with anyone else.

***Just stop and think for a moment what kind of reality we are dealing with – that the one and only God of this entire universe can become your best Friend and your one and only true Father! I repeat – your best Friend! A true best Friend who will never harm you, hurt you, mistreat you, lie to you, leave you, or forsake you!***

So many people in this life have been abused, hurt, wounded, mistreated, and discarded by their parents, by their spouses, and by some of their so called good friends. As a result, they have a hard time in being able to trust anyone, including God Himself.

Per the article we have titled, "Trusting in the Lord," the Bible tells us that we have to learn how to fully trust in the Lord. God is the only One who is perfect in His very nature and personality, and He thus is the only One that we can perfectly trust in this life. All other men and women in this life are fallen and imperfect creatures. This is why each and every Christian has to learn how to place all of their faith and trust in the Lord – not in the world, and not in all of the other people in this world.

God has already shown us how much He really does love all of us by being willing to send down and sacrifice His one and only Son. All God is asking from each one of us is that we be willing to fully trust Him, and then be willing to enter into this special, intimate, personal relationship with Him.

***For those of you who are really looking for true love – true love can only be found in a perfect Being – and God is the only perfect Being in the entire scheme of things.***

***Though we are to do the best we can in establishing good, healthy, personal relationships with all of our family and friends – realize that only God is totally perfect in His very nature and personality – and only God can give you a perfect, true, and unconditional love that no one else will be able to give you in this life.***

If you place all of your love and trust in the other people in this life rather than direct to God Himself, then sooner or later you will find yourself hurt, wounded, and bitterly disappointed. Imperfect people are not capable of giving you any type of perfect and unconditional love – no matter how hard they try, and no matter how hard they will try and tell you otherwise.

So many people are chasing after other people and other material things in this life in an effort to try and find perfect happiness, peace, and fulfillment. And then sooner or later it happens. All of their marriages, all of their good friends, all of their earthly wealth and possessions, and all of their personal accomplishments leave them feeling dead, empty, and lifeless on the inside. All of the good friends they may have made, and all of the earthly material wealth they may have acquired and accumulated in this life fail to fill the void and emptiness that is on the inside of each and everyone of us.

God has purposely created all of us with a void and a vacuum on the inside of each of us – and the only thing that can fill that void and emptiness is the Lord Himself. There is nothing else in this world that can fill that little hole that is in all of our souls. This hole can only be completely filled by God the Father, His Son Jesus Christ, and the Holy Spirit.

Some people manage to find this revelation and truth in their lives, but sadly, most people do not. As Christians, we all have something that no one else has in this life – we have the real God in God the Father, we have the one and only real Savior of this world in Jesus Christ, and we have the one and only Holy Spirit who will come and live on the inside of us once we have accepted Jesus as our personal Lord and Savior. As the Bible has already told us, we literally have the kingdom of God residing on the inside of us once we have become saved and born again.

We literally have the one and only true fountain of perfect peace and happiness – and that is the Lord Himself! And it is all there for the taking for those who are willing to dive into Him and start to seek and drink from Him. Jesus has already told us that He Himself is the fountain of living waters and that we will never hunger or thirst again if we would only be willing to drink directly from Him. **The water is Jesus – and the drinking is our seeking to establish a close, intimate, personal relationship with Him.**

God is waiting for each and every person He has created to come to Him to try and establish this kind of close, intimate, personal relationship with Him. And this can be done if you will just seek after Him with all of your heart, with all of your mind, and with all of your soul.

Now here are some of the main verses from the Bible giving us this profound secret and revelation direct from the Lord Himself. I will break these Scripture verses down under 5 separate captions so you can see exactly what the Lord is trying to convey to all of us in these very powerful verses.

## 1. God Is Looking For Seekers

These first two verses will perfectly set the stage for all of us in reference to learning how to develop a good personal relationship with the Lord.

This first verse will tell us that God the Father is actually looking down on this earth from His heaven for those who will seek after Him and who will try and understand Him. The second verse perfectly completes this first verse when it tells us that God is looking for those who will try and take a hold of Him.

Put these two verses together side by side, and God the Father is telling all of us, loud and clear, that He is looking for passionate and intense seekers who will try and take a hold of Him, who will try and figure Him out, and who will try to understand Him and all of His ways.

Here are two very profound verses giving us this incredible piece of revelation:

**1. "The Lord looks down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there are any who understand, who seek God." (Psalm 14:2)**

**2. "And there is no one who calls on Your name, who stirs himself up to take hold of You ..." (Isaiah 64:7)**

To think that this one and only all-powerful God is actually looking down on this earth from His heavenly throne to try and find people who are willing to seek after Him. This verse is shouting from the roof tops two very powerful words – **open invitation!**

God the Father is giving every single one of us an open invitation to come in and make some kind of attempt to seek after Him. And what will happen next if we make some kind of attempt to seek after Him? This will now lead us into the next set of verses.

## **2. Seeking After the Lord**

These next set of verses will tell us that not only does God the Father want us to seek after Him, but they will tell us that if we make some kind of attempt to seek after Him, that we will actually **"find Him."** In other words, we will end up making some kind of direct contact with God.

Think of the ramifications of what these next set of verses are trying to tell us – that if we make some kind of attempt to seek after God, that we will be able to find Him, that we will be able to make some kind of direct contact with Him where He can then start to communicate back to us.

Study these next set of verses very, very carefully. Meditate on what the Lord is trying to tell us. These verses in particular are giving all of us of a major and profound secret in that this incredible and awesome God of ours can actually be **"found"** to some degree in this life if we are willing to make enough of an effort on our end to seek directly after Him.

**1. "Draw near to God and He will draw near to you." (James 4:8)**

2. For thus says the Lord God to the House of Israel: "**Seek Me and live ... Seek the Lord and live ...**" (*Amos 5:4,6*)
3. "**Seek the Lord and His strength; seek His face evermore!**" (*1 Chronicles 16:11*)
4. "**And you will seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart.**" (*Jeremiah 29:13*)
5. "... **and you will find Him if you seek Him with all your heart and with all your soul.**" (*Deuteronomy 4:29*)
6. "Blessed are the undefiled in the way, who walk in the law of the Lord! Blessed are those who keep His testimonies, **who seek Him with the whole heart!**" (*Psalms 119:1*)
7. "**For it is time to seek the Lord,** till He comes and rains righteousness on you." (*Hosea 10:12*)
8. "With my soul I have desired You in the night, yes, by my spirit within me **I will seek You early ...**" (*Isaiah 26:9*)
9. "Then they entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God of their fathers with all their heart and with all their soul ..." (*2 Chronicles 15:12*)
10. "If you seek Him, He will be found by you; but if you forsake Him, He will cast you off forever." (*1 Chronicles 28:9*)
11. "O God, you are my God; **early I will seek You;** my soul thirsts for You; my flesh longs for You in a dry and thirsty land where there is no water." (*Psalms 63:1*)
12. "As the deer pants for the water brooks, so pants my soul for You, O God. My soul thirsts for God, for the living God." (*Psalms 42:1*)
13. "... **and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.**" (*Hebrews 11:6*)

When you read each one of these verses one right after the other – the message is coming through loud and clear. God is looking for intense seekers who are willing to seek after Him with all of their heart and with all of their soul. He will not settle for anything less.

These verses are not only telling us that God wants all of us to seek after Him – but He is also telling us that we will be able to find Him to some



degree and to some extent if we keep pressing in to make this kind of direct connection with Him. Our seeking will not be in vain. The last verse tells us that the Lord will reward those who are willing to **"diligently seek"** after Him.

### 3. God Created Us For Intimate Fellowship

As I said at the top of this article, I believe the main reason God created the human race was for intimate fellowship – and that is intimate fellowship direct with Him, His Son Jesus Christ, and His Holy Spirit.

The different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries describe the word **"fellowship"** as the following:

- **Sharing together**
- **Communion with God**
- **Sharing things in common with others**
- **Companionship, friendly association, mutual sharing**
- **The bond of common purpose and devotion that binds Christians together and to Christ**

Not only does God want us to learn how to fellowship with other people in this life, but He also wants us to learn how to fellowship direct with Him, His Son, and His Holy Spirit. Here are two very powerful verses giving us this revelation that we can have fellowship direct with all three Persons of the triune Godhead.

1. "... that which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; **and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ.**" (*1 John 1:3*)
2. "Therefore if there is any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, **if any fellowship of the Spirit ...**" (*Philippians 2:1*)

The first verse tells us that we can fellowship direct with both God and Jesus. The second verse tells us that we can have fellowship direct with the Holy Spirit Himself. Put both of these verses together side by side, and God is telling all of us loud and clear, that He wants us to have intimate fellowship with both Him, His Son, and His Holy Spirit.

## 4. Talk to God Like You Would Talk to a Best Friend

Probably one of the greatest stories in the Bible about someone who was not afraid to approach God and attempt to commune and talk to Him like you would a best friend has to be the [story of Moses](#).

In the Bible Stories section of our site, we have two articles on Moses and the incredible adventures he personally had with God the Father over the last 40 years of his life. The title of these two articles are "The Story of Moses" and "Lessons From the Story of Moses."

Without question, this man's story and adventure in God will go down as one of the greatest God-stories of all time. This one man, in a 40 year period, was able to talk direct to God, see God personally manifest His presence from His back side, receive all of [the 10 commandments](#), and help prepare a younger generation to go in and possess the Promised Land.

As a result of his incredible, face-to-face encounters with the Lord, God ended up giving this man two of the highest compliments any human could ever hope to receive from the Lord in this lifetime. Here are the two verses giving Moses these two incredible compliments from the Lord:

- **"But since then there has not risen in Israel a prophet like Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face." (Deuteronomy 34:10)**
- **"So the Lord spoke to Moses face to face, as a man speaks to his friend." (Exodus 33:11)**

The first verse says that Moses **"knew"** God face to face. The word **"knew"** is implying that Moses had established a very good personal relationship with the Lord. The second set of words, where it says that Moses knew the Lord **"face to face,"** is also implying that he made a good type of personal connection with the Lord in an effort to try and get to know Him better.

Notice that Moses was seeking after the **"face"** of God, not after His hand. Too many Christians only seek after the hand of God, which represents what He might be able to give them or help bring their way. Seeking after the **"face"** of God means that you are seeking directly after God in an effort to try and get to know Him better as a Person. You are seeking after God to get to know His personality.

The Bible tells us that no one can see the face of God and live. God told Moses, when He was getting ready to manifest His presence before him, that He would not be able to show him His actual face, but only His backside. So when the Bible uses the words that Moses knew God **"face to face,"** it is showing us that Moses ended up coming to know God in a very personal and intimate way. It is not referring to Moses being able to actually see the face of God.

This now leads us to the revelation that is in the second verse. This second verse then goes one step further and tells us that Moses spoke to God face to face **"as a man speaks to his friend."** This is where I am picking up the revelation that we are to learn how to talk to God as we would with a best friend.

***When God the Father Himself is spelling out these specific words in that we are to commune and talk with Him as we would with a good friend, then you know we are dealing with a major and profound revelation from the Lord. This is why I have been using the best friend analogy to help try and explain what kind of personal relationship God is really looking to establish with each one of us.***

Jesus Himself further expounds on this friend analogy with what He has to say in the following verse:

**"You are my friends if you do whatever I command you.** No longer do I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing; **but I have called you friends,** for all things that I heard from My Father I have made known to you." (John 15:14)

Jesus is calling us His friends. God the Father is telling us that Moses learned to how to speak and talk to Him like you would a good friend. Put all three of these verses together, and God and Jesus are telling us that They want a best-friend type of personal relationship with each one of us. If God has to be number one in your life, then it is only logical to conclude that God wants to become your best Friend, over and above any other best friends that you may have in this life.

These two verses on Moses' personal relationship with the Lord may only be two, short, one-line sentences in the Bible, but they are both giving us an incredibly profound secret in the Lord – and that secret is that we learn how to develop a best-friend type of personal relationship with the Lord. God does not want to settle for anything less.

What Moses managed to accomplish with the Lord should serve as a powerful example for all of us on how we are to interact with God and what we should really be seeking and striving after in this life.

***Without question, our number one goal and priority in this life should be to establish a good, close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord. I believe that trying to establish this kind of good, close, personal relationship with the Lord is even more important than completing whatever His perfect plan and destiny is going to be for our lives.***

You could end up doing great and mighty works for the Lord in this lifetime, but if all those works are not being done operating in a good, close, personal relationship with Him, then you could end up feeling sad, lonely, and despondent.

***All of the good works that you can do for the Lord in this lifetime will not fill that hole and void that is on the inside of your soul. The only thing that can fill that hole and void is the Lord Himself, not the actual works that you are doing for Him. And the only way that you can get the Lord to fill that hole and void is to enter into a good, personal relationship with Him.***

## **5. God is Looking for Passionate and Intense People**

Not only are the above verses telling us that God is actually looking for seekers, but He is also looking for people who will seek after Him with a certain amount of intensity in their seeking of Him.

These next three verses will put the icing on this entire cake. The first verse will tell us that Jesus Himself will spew us out of His mouth if He finds that we have become too lukewarm in our own personal relationship with Him and in the works that we will do for Him in this life. This verse is so extreme, that Jesus is telling us that He would rather find us to be too cold than too lukewarm. At least if you are too cold, you are operating at the other extreme end of the scale.

I believe the reason Jesus is telling us that we have to learn how to seek after Him with a high level of intensity is because nothing will kill a personal relationship faster than if one or both of the parties start to go dead and lukewarm in the way they interact with one another.

Many spouses end up wandering into the arms of another lover behind their spouses back as a result of the deadness and lukewarmness that has infected their marriage relationship. Just as this same kind of lukewarmness can kill a good marriage relationship, it can also hurt or possibly kill our own personal relationship with God Himself.

**God has made all of us after His own image and likeness. As a result, God has created and wired all of us for maximum intensity. Just as our God is a God of maximum intensity, this same God has created and wired all of us for this same kind of maximum intensity. This is why God will not settle for any type of lukewarmness in our own personal relationship with Him.**

This is why so many people are such avid sports fans. Sporting games give all of us a chance to release maximum intensity for the teams and players that we are rooting for.

**When you really study this part of God's personality – we are seeing a God who is not dull, boring, or lukewarm. We are looking at a God who is extremely passionate and intense.**

**In the same way, God is wanting all of us to learn how to live this life at a higher level of passion and intensity. He is wanting all of us to learn how to live more of this life at a full throttle, at a full pedal to the medal type mentality in how we serve Him, in how we interact with Him, and how we work for Him in this life.**

**There is nothing more contagious, more infectious, and more energetic than to be around a true Spirit-filled Christian who is fully alive in the Lord, and who is fully serving and working for the Lord with maximum passion and intensity.**

Now here are three very special verses from the Lord showing us what He is really looking for in how we interact and work for Him in this life.

1. "I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot. So then, because you are lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew you out of My mouth."  
**(Revelation 3:15)**
2. "These people draw near to Me with their mouth, and honor Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. And in vain they worship Me ..." **(Matthew 15:8)**
3. "For My people have committed two evils: they have forsaken Me, the fountain of living waters, and hewn themselves cisterns – broken cisterns that can hold no water ... Know therefore and see that is an evil and bitter thing that you have forsaken the Lord your God, and the fear of Me is not in you," says the Lord God of hosts. **(Jeremiah 2:13,19)**

Not only is the Lord looking for on-fire, passionate, and intense people, but this passionate intensity has to be coming from our heart. Notice in the second verse that Jesus is ripping on those who are just paying Him lip service. These types of people may talk a good game, but they are not really talking about God and serving Him from their heart with any kind of real passionate intensity. It's all words and show, with no real substance behind their words, actions, and behaviors.

The last verse perfectly sums up what God the Father thinks about people who will eventually end up forsaking Him and leaving Him. He is telling anyone who is willing to forget, forsake, and leave Him – that they are committing an evil and bitter act against Him.

***Bottom line – God the Father has made all of us for Himself. God has made all of us with a hole, a void, a vacuum, and an emptiness inside our souls that can only be filled up by His presence.***

***We can thus either learn how to start seeking after God so we can enter into this powerful, personal, and intense relationship with Him – or we can turn our back on God, completely forsake Him, and trade Him in for all of the carnal and fleshly pleasures of this world.***

I am afraid with all the luxuries and material wealth this world has to offer, many Christians have forsaken and abandoned their God and have now traded Him in for a life of total carnal pursuit.

The last verse stated above is a real bone-chilling verse when it says that is an evil and bitter thing to have forsaken the Lord for all the material wealth of this world that has nothing but leaks and holes in it and will never hold any real water. All of the earthly wealth you may be able to collect and accumulate in this life will never be able to hold any real water because it will eventually rot and perish away.

In other words, all of the earthly wealth and possessions that this world has to offer has leaks in them, and they will all sooner or later completely perish and be taken away from you on your deathbed. And the only thing that will be left standing, when everything is all finally said and done, is you standing totally alone before the Judgment Seat of Christ, with Jesus judging you on how well you have served Him and followed Him in this life. None of your earthly wealth and possessions will be going over with you when you finally die and cross over to meet Jesus head on for this personal judgment.

God has so plainly and clearly laid out how He wants all of us to live this life and exactly what it is that we all should be seeking after – but yet so many Christians keep missing the mark and fail to get their priorities

straight in how they should be living this life, and exactly what it is they should be seeking after in this life with the Lord.

Our two main goals in this life should be to first seek to enter into a full surrender with the Lord so that He is fully free to guide us into His perfect plan and destiny for our lives. The second thing that each fully surrendered Christian should be willing to do is to seek after God with all of their heart and with all of their soul so they can start to establish and enter into this maximum intense kind of personal relationship with Him.

## 5 Ways To Seek After the Lord

Now that we know the Lord is definitely wanting all of us to seek after Him – exactly how do we go about really seeking after Him?

I will give you 5 basic ways in which you can seek after the Lord in this life so you can improve the quality and depth of your personal relationship with Him.

### 1. Your Prayer Life With the Lord

Without question, the number one way that you should seek after the Lord is in your own personal private prayer life with Him. Your personal prayer life with the Lord has two sides to it.

On the one side is where you are praying to God for something very specific, whether it be directly for you or for someone else you may be praying for. We already have a Prayer Secrets Section in our site that will specifically deal with this part of our prayer life with the Lord, so I will not go any further on this part of our prayer life with Him.

The second part to your prayer life, and this is the one that I really want to concentrate on for this article, is where you walk and talk with God much like what you would do with a best friend. This is not where you are asking God for anything in particular. You are just walking and talking with God just like you would do with a best friend.

**If there is one major, whopper secret that will open up the door to God's heart, it has to be the secret of learning how to talk and communicate with Him much in the same way as you would do with a best friend. For those of you who have a best friend or who used to have one, you will know exactly what I am about to talk about.**

A true best-friendship is without question, the most unique and special of all the personal relationships that you can have with anyone else in this life.

Granted, there is nothing like the bond and love that exists between parents and their own natural children. But as great and powerful as that bond is, a true best-friend relationship can actually go farther and deeper than what can transpire between some parents and their natural children. It would really be nice if all of the relationships between parents and their children could turn into and develop into true best friendships, but for many in this life, this never really happens.

This type of best-friendship should really be occurring between parents and their children, and between spouses in their marriages due to the large amount of close interaction that occurs in a family unit. But for many different reasons, this type of best-friendship really never develops in the way that it should in many households across this world, and you thus have many parents and children living and breathing right next to one another with no real passionate love and intimacy ever being established and forged with one another. As a result, many people are forced to try and find a true best friend outside the family unit.

There is obviously nothing wrong in making best friends with other people outside the family unit, but every family, if they are walking right with the Lord, should also be making and developing many of these best friend relationships right there in the middle of their own household – husbands with wives, parents with their children, and children with the other siblings in the household. There is so much quality time that everyone is spending with one another in a family unit, that this kind of quality time should be leading to more people in a household becoming best friends with one another.

But as we all know, for many different reasons, this does not occur with everyone in the family unit. As a result, many people are forced to try and find a true best friend outside the family unit. I cannot even begin to count the number of married men and women I have personally met who no longer feel their spouse is their true best friend. And they are now stuck feeling totally isolated and alone right in the middle of their actual marriage.

As I said at the top of this article, the real reality is that imperfect people are incapable of giving perfect love to one another, so most people have to be very careful when they start to seek and search for a true best friend. But when you do find one, you have found a true treasure in this life.

The one thing that is so unique and special about a true best friendship is the incredible comfortableness you will feel in the relationship. All guards and shields will start to come down. You can totally trust this person. You can totally be yourself around this person.



As a result of being so comfortable with this person, you feel totally free to express your most intimate and secret thoughts with one another. There is literally nothing that you cannot talk about or freely discuss. You can tell your best friend things that you could never tell your spouse or your own children. You feel like you and this best friend are one in spirit and one in mind. You start to get to the point where you can sometimes read each other's minds and thoughts. You can sometimes feel their pain to the same degree they are feeling it.

For those of you who have this type of best-friendship with someone, you know exactly what I am talking about. This type of special, unique, close, personal relationship is exactly what God is looking for from each one of us.

The Bible tells us to seek after the **"face"** of God, not after His hand, which represents what He might be able to give to you. Seeking after the face of God means that we are to seek directly God's heart and personality. We are to seek directly after His personality so we can start to get to know Him in a much better and deeper way.

Bottom line – we should seek after God in the exact same way we would seek into a true best friend. All of the above verses are telling us that we will be able to **"find"** this awesome God of ours if we are willing to expend some quality time and energy to seek directly after Him. And once we find Him, then the doors will be opened up between Him and us!

God will now be willing to open up His heart, His mind, His ways, some of His thoughts, and some of His actual emotions direct to us. In other words, God is looking to share a part of His personality with us if we would only be willing to do the same with Him – just like what we would be willing to do with a true best friend. Except with God, we are dealing with a Being who is totally and completely perfect in His personality.

We are thus looking and gazing on a perfect Being who has the ability to transmit and release perfect, true, unconditional love in a way that no other human will ever be able to do in this life.

***If there is one major, whopper, profound, can't shout-it-out-loud enough thing that God is looking for from each one of us – it has to be this revelation that we try and seek to establish this kind of best-friend relationship with Him.***

***Talk to God just like you would talk to your best friend. Share your most intimate, private, and personal thoughts and feelings with Him that you would never consider sharing with anyone else.***

***Be willing to completely open yourself up to the Lord, with no holds barred. Be willing to lay yourself totally bare. Be available to God 24/7, not for just 2 hours a week in a Sunday church service. Be willing to talk and communicate with God anywhere and at anytime.***

***Just like you have total freedom to call your best friend up anytime you want, do the exact same thing with God. The Bible tells us that God never sleeps or slumbers. He is always on duty, day or night, rain or shine, storm cloud or no storm cloud. He is always there for you, 24/7, 365 days every year.***

God already knows all the thoughts of your mind and heart, so there is nothing you can hide from Him anyway. And not only does He know every single thought and word that is floating around in your mind and heart to begin with – but He knows what you are going to say and think before you even begin to say it or think it, since He has perfect knowledge on all future events, including what will be coming out of your mind or your mouth.

If you are willing to open yourself up to the Lord with this kind of open and honest intimacy with Him, then you will have just touched the heart of God – and He will now more than blow you away with what He will do with you and how He will handle your life from here on in.

I believe this best-friend type of personal relationship that God is looking to establish with each one of us is the main reason that He has created the human race. God is so jealous and so possessive of the human race that He has created, that He has purposely made all of us to only be able to live in this life and the next life to come only if we are willing to bond and graft directly into Him through the Blood that His Son Jesus has already shed for us on the cross.

In other words, we either learn how to bond and graft into our Lord with the kind of close, intimate, personal relationship that He is really looking for – or we will eventually die and be cast off from Him forever.

Jesus Himself is telling us that He will spew us out of His mouth if we ever get to the point of taking Him too much for granted or start to get too lukewarm in our own personal relationship with Him. The last verse above perfectly spells it out for all of us in that if we ever forsake or turn away from our Lord, then we will have committed an evil and bitter act in His sight.

## **2. Reading and Studying From the Bible**

The next big way that you should attempt to seek after God is by reading and studying from the Bible. The Bible is God's only true Word to us in this life.

God has given us everything that we will ever need to be able understand Him, His Son, His Holy Spirit, and all of His ways in just this one Book. Just as God made it as easy as possibly He could for Adam and Eve by telling them to stay off one simple tree – in the same way God has made it as easy as He possibly could by putting all of the information, knowledge, and revelation that we will ever need to find and understand Him in one special Holy Book. And yet most Christians will go their entire lives having never read this one special Book in its complete entirety. As a result, they never really get to learn much about God, His ways, and how He likes to work and operate.

I believe the Bible is serving as a real litmus test between God and us in this life. If you are a true, saved, born-again, on-fire Christian, then God is going to sit back and see how much of a desire you really have to try and get to know Him. There are two main ways that He is going to do this.

The first main way that God is going to test you on this is to see how far and to what extent you will attempt to make some kind of personal contact with Him in order to try and establish a good personal relationship with Him. The second main way that God is going to test you is by watching to see if you will make some kind of attempt to learn more about Him by reading and studying from the Bible.

If you are really in love with God, and are really wanting to increase the depth and quality of your own personal relationship with Him, then you will have a very strong natural desire and hunger to want to get into His Word so you can then start to feed off all the knowledge and revelation that is contained in this Book.

There is simply no other book on this earth that we can feed off that will give us the amount of direct revelation and knowledge about God and who He really is as the Bible can. And again, God has made it as simple and easy as He possibly could by putting everything that we would ever need all in this one Book.

This is why I say the Bible is the real litmus test between God and us – as it will be what will separate the true, passionate, on-fire seeker from the lukewarm, lazy, and worldly Christian who could really care less about God and any of His ways on how we are to live in this life.

With the Blood that His Son Jesus has already shed for all of us on the cross, God the Father has now opened up the gates to His heaven and the gates direct to Himself.

***All we have to be willing to do is to believe and accept Jesus Christ as our personal Lord and Savior – be willing to seek after God by making some kind of an attempt to enter into a good personal relationship with Him – and then seek to learn more about Him and all of His ways by reading and studying from His Word. If we do, then we will spiritually grow and mature in this life beyond anything that we ever thought was possible.***

### **3. Reading and Studying From Other Christian Books**

In addition to the wealth of knowledge and revelation that is contained in the Bible, there is also an enormous amount of information and knowledge in other good anointed Christian books.

God the Father has anointed many teachers in this day and age to be able to teach from His Word. Many of these teachers have written some very good books covering a wide range of issues and topics that will also help you grow in the knowledge and ways of the Lord.

For the real seeker in the Lord, there is a whole treasure chest of goodies at your local Christian bookstore. You can find good, anointed, Christian books covering just about any topic or issue you may be interested in. In the Christian Book section of our own site, we have a list of some very good books covering a wide variety of topics.

If you can combine the study of Scripture with the reading of other good anointed books, you will spiritually grow at a rate that will truly astound you. Going into this kind of heavy seeking mode trying to acquire as much knowledge as you can about the Lord will really move the Holy Spirit to want to work on your behalf.

If you are willing to spend some good quality time trying to increase your knowledge base on the Lord and all of His ways, then the Holy Spirit will really start to move to help you out in understanding and assimilating what you are reading so that true spiritual growth can occur in this life. This is a direct supernatural work that the Holy Spirit can do for every single believer who is willing to put forth the time and effort to try and learn more about our Lord.

### **4. Fellowship With Other Believers**

Another powerful way that you can seek after the Lord is by being willing to fellowship with other like-minded believers. When you are attempting to fellowship with other believers, you are willing to share your walk, your

testimonies, and your knowledge base with them – and they in turn will do likewise with you.

As a result of sharing your stories, your testimonies, and your knowledge base with one another, you will get to learn more about the Lord from these other believers. God will be doing different things with some of them than maybe what He has done with you. As a result, you can each learn from one another in the personal experiences that you have had in the Lord.

I cannot tell you how much more my knowledge base has increased in the Lord over the years as a result of learning from some of my other close seeker-friends and what God is doing in their lives. And I am still continuing to learn from each and everyone of them as they continue to share their walk and journey in the Lord with me.

By being willing to learn from other believers, you will be showing the Lord your strong desire to want to learn more about Him and all of His ways, and that you are leaving no stone unturned in your seeking and pursuit of Him. God loves to be the center of attention, and He loves it when His people sit around and talk about Him and share their knowledge base with one another. When you do this with other believers, you are seeking directly after the Lord.

## **5. Watch For the Lord to Move in Your Everyday Life**

This next area is one area that many Christians are missing out on. Once you enter into a full surrender with the Lord where He is now fully free to guide you into His perfect plan and destiny for your life, and then you combine that with seeking directly after Him in order to establish a good, strong, personal relationship with Him – you will have opened up a major supernatural door with the Lord, and He will now start to move in many different areas of your life to help you maximize your walk and call with Him.

And this is where it really gets fun, interesting, and exciting. Once you put the pedal-to-the-medal with the Lord in your seeking of Him, then He is now going to move very strongly on your behalf, and He will now start to show Himself to you in a wide variety of miraculous ways.

What this means is that you now have to keep your radars up each and every day, as you never know when, where, or how God will move next. Your job will be to try and pick it up when God does move in some kind of supernatural way to help you out.

God can move in your life in a wide variety of ways and in a wide variety of matters. God can move to help give you favor with your bosses and supervisors at your places of employment. He can supernaturally open up doors to the next new job that He may want to promote you into.

He can help you with the everyday activities of your job. He can help you with the raising and parenting of your children and all of the everyday activity that goes on in the family. He can help you solve problems, handle different types of emergencies, and help warn and protect you of oncoming dangers.

There are literally an infinite number of things or situations that God can get actively involved in within your own normal everyday life. God is much more active in people's daily lives than most people actually realize or see.

If you are willing to go into this kind of intense seeking mode with the Lord where you have your radars up each and everyday looking for God to move in your life in some way or some fashion – then the Holy Spirit will help open up your eyes and help increase your ability to be able to spot it, recognize it, and actually see it when it does occur so you can fully appreciate it and be very thankful for it when it does happen.

The Bible calls the Holy Spirit the Helper, and there is no area of your life that is too small or too trivial that He will not be willing to give you a helping hand on when His help is really needed.

## Conclusion

For those of you who have never attempted to draw close to the Lord in your own personal relationship with Him, study the specific wording in all of the above verses very, very carefully.

***All of these verses are giving us a major life-changing secret – and that secret is that the Lord is calling each and every person that He has ever created to have intimate fellowship with Him.***

If a person is willing to come to God the Father by accepting Jesus Christ as their personal Lord and Savior, then all roadblocks and barriers between them and God will now be totally removed forever. Any true, born-again believer now has direct access to God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit 24/7, 365 days a year. There are now no more barriers between God and us.

Since God is no respecter of persons, you will have just as much of a chance in being to establish a close, intimate, personal relationship with

Him as anyone else would. God will not be playing favorites with anyone in this realm.

You seek – and **then** you will find God. You draw near to God – and **then** God will draw near to you. The more you seek of God, the more of God you will find. You give God a 100% effort on your end, and God will more than give you a 100% effort from His end.

Of all of the articles that we have in our site covering a wide variety of topics, the revelation and knowledge that is contained in the above verses are in my opinion, the most important of all for each Christian to try and get worked into their personal walk with the Lord.

Once you have become saved and born again by accepting Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Savior, then the next big step that will await you is whether or not you will attempt to enter into an intense, passionate, personal relationship with the Lord. God cannot make you come to Him. All God can do is give you the knowledge from His Word that this is what He is really looking for from each one of us more than anything else in this world.

***All of the above Scripture verses are as clear as they can be on this issue. God has created all of us to have intimate and close fellowship with Him. God has created all of us to come into close communion with Him. God not only wants to be your perfect heavenly Father, but He also wants to become your perfect best Friend.***

***God has nothing but your best interests at heart. He will never hurt you, bad-mouth you, forsake you, or leave you. He wants nothing more than to be able to draw you close to Him so He can help you get through this life in one piece, and accomplish everything that He would like for you to get done in this life in the perfect plan He has set up for your life.***

I know some people have a major fear of drawing close to God as a result of being terribly hurt or wounded by some of the other people in their lives. But if you believe that our Bible is truly the inspired and infallible Word of our Holy God, then you have to believe what all of the above verses are trying to tell you.

If the Bible tells us that God has no darkness in Him and that He cannot commit any kind of evil, then you have to believe and ground on these types of statements and learn how to override all of the hurts you may have suffered in your past from other people.

Our God is a faithful, loyal, loving, and perfect God. He is totally trustworthy since He is totally perfect in His personality. This means you

will be on perfectly safe ground once you decide to approach Him and enter into His realm. He will perfectly handle you at whatever level of spiritual development you may be operating at, no matter how low of a level you think that may be.

This kind of an intense personal relationship with the Lord will not be built up overnight. God will work to bring you up into this level at a nice, slow, comfortable pace that you will be very comfortable in working with.

As I said at the beginning of this article, most romantic love relationships between men and women do not start off with any kind of maximum intensity. It usually takes a while for the real true sparks of love to build up. It's the exact same way with God the Father. All God is asking for is that you just give Him a few small steps to work with, and He will then more than prove Himself to you that you can learn to fully trust Him and eventually fall madly and passionately in love with Him.

This kind of a close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord can happen in this lifetime. You do not have to wait until you get to heaven to be able to establish this kind of close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord.

You already have the Holy Spirit residing on the inside of you. He is already there, ready and waiting for your green light to help draw you closer to the Lord. The Holy Spirit will help you in being able to draw much closer to God and Jesus in your own personal relationship with each one of Them if you let Him know that you really want to take this kind of a plunge. But the choice will always remain with each individual believer. All God can do is let you know that He is there for you.

God has done everything that He possibly could to draw each person back unto Himself. He has sacrificed His one and only Son to pay the full penalty for all of our sins and transgressions – and He has given us His direct Word, which has given all of us the knowledge and revelation that we will ever need in this life to be able to understand Him and the big picture on how everything has been set up.

***Be willing to seek after the face of God like Moses did in order to establish a true, best-friend type of personal relationship with Him – and I guarantee that you will find a happiness, peace, joy, and fulfillment that you will never find in all of the worldly pleasures of this life.***



## Living a Good and Righteous Life Before the Lord

**T**he Bible tells us in 2 Timothy 3:1 that as we start approaching the end times, that the love of many will grow cold and that lawlessness and immorality will start to abound. It also says in this verse that men will become lovers of self and money, along with becoming unholy, blasphemers, unloving, unthankful, disobedient to parents, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, traitors, headstrong and lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God.

As bad as the moral state of man is right now, believe it or not, it is going to get a lot worse in the coming years according to the above verse.

When it comes to the real big picture with our Lord, the age old question is simply why – why did Satan and one third of the angels have to choose with their own free wills to go against God and His holy and righteous ways? Why couldn't they just do the right thing and stay loyal to the Lord and choose to live good and righteous lives before Him?

And then when God decides to create a second race of beings, the human race, again, why couldn't Adam and Eve have chosen with their own free wills to obey one simple little command from the Lord to stay off one forbidden tree?

And then when they couldn't pass their one simple little test, and then the rest of the human race is created and born into a now fallen and cursed world, we now once again still have the same old problem. Again, why does a certain percentage of the human race still have to choose with their own free wills to go against God and all of His holy and righteous ways just like one third of the angels managed to do?

As you will see in the verses I will list below, God has written His basic laws into the heart of every created being. We all know basic right from basic wrong, and yet so many of us still choose to this day with our own free wills to do the wrong thing at certain times, with some of the more evil people in this life doing some really bad and evil things that a normal person would never consider doing like robbing, raping, killing, kidnapping and torturing.

There is not a day that goes by that we do not see some kind of extreme evil being committed on some kind of a regular basis across the entire world. With all the advancements in technology, and with the world now becoming a much more smaller and closer space due to how inter-connected we all now are, many still have not learned from the history

lessons of our past, and we still have many people who are out there acting out on their evil and fleshly impulses with no regard as to who they hurt, kill, or destroy. Some people are as primal now as they were 5000 years ago.

Many people who have had some type of evil crime committed against either them or one of their close loved ones have always asked themselves **why** when it happens to one of them? How can some people commit such horrible and evil acts on another fellow human being? Why can't we just all live in peace and harmony with one another?

And not only can man not get along with his fellow man, but we also have nations always wanting to stir up trouble with other nations, as the Bible tells us that as we approach the end times, that there will be wars and rumors of wars, and that nations will be going against other nations and that kingdoms will be going against other kingdoms.

When you step back and look at the real big picture, it is just heart-breaking to see all of this kind of carnage play itself out every single day across much of the world. And again, why can't most of the human race just get it right with the Lord and learn how to follow His holy and righteous ways so we can all learn how to live in peace and harmony with one another?

God has given all of us a free will, and we all have the ability to choose between the good and righteous side of this life or the evil and dark side of this life. Even though we still have demons who are still roaming in the air trying to get us to do their evil bidding, God will still hold all of us personally accountable for any kind of bad and evil acts we will end up committing in this life.

Though Satan was the one who tempted Eve to disobey one simple little command, God still held both Adam and Eve totally responsible for what they did in the Garden of Eden, even though it was Satan who was the one who put the pressure on them to try and get them to do it. For most of us, the excuse that "the devil made me do it" will not be washing with the Lord once we die and cross over and meet Him head on for all of our own personal judgments.

As we have said before in many of the articles in our Spiritual Warfare section, for the most part, demons cannot make you do anything against your own free will, as God will not let them violate that space that you have within your own being. All demons can try and do is persuade you and tempt you to do evil things. But the choice will always remain up to each one of us as to whether or not we will fall for their evil suggestions. Just because a demon plants a thought and a desire in your head to go out and kill someone does not mean you have to actually try and do it.

Unless you are mentally ill to any serious degree, God will watch your response to these demons just like He did with Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden – and He will then hold you personally accountable if you decide to act out on any of their evil suggestions. If you decide to act out on any evil thoughts or desires that are playing in your mind, your day of judgment will eventually come before the Lord, and you will then have to pay the full price for your sins if you do not get saved and get those sins fully forgiven by the blood of Jesus before you die and cross over.

Even the apostle Paul, who I believe was the greatest of all of the New Testament apostles, had a problem in controlling his flesh and dark side. Here is the verse straight from this man's mouth on he himself having some problems controlling some of his own thoughts and actions. This statement is a classic statement on the sin nature that we all have in us.

***"For what I am doing, I do not understand. For what I will to do, that I do not practice; but what I hate, that I do."  
(Romans 7:15)***

In other words, Paul is finding out like the rest of us that we all end up doing things in this life that we know we should not be doing. We can all witness to this classic statement, as we all have problems from time to time in doing things that we know that are not right in the eyes of God.

As we have said before, no man, no woman, and no angel is ever going to become the 4th person of the Divine Trinity. Only God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit are completely and totally perfect in Their divine personalities. They are completely and totally perfect all the way down the line in every single one of Their personality qualities.

However, this now leaves God with a bit of a dilemma. This means that every single being that He will ever create is not going to be perfect like He is and they will now be capable of malfunctioning to the dark side.

With one third of the angels malfunctioning to the dark side, and a good percentage of the human race now doing the exact same thing, there is simply no other conclusion that we can come to. We are simply all fallen and sinful creatures and only the blood of Jesus Christ can make us righteous and clean enough before God the Father to get us into heaven, as the Bible tells us that all men and women have sinned and fallen way short of the glory of God.

As you will see in the one of the verses I will list below, we are actually born into this world through our mother's womb in sin and iniquity. In other words, we are all born doomed and damned right off the bat unless we receive and accept the free redemptive pardon that Jesus Christ is offering to each one of us through His sacrificial death on the cross.

Again, here are 7 very good verses showing us that we have all been born into this world as sinners in the eyes of God – but if we accept what Jesus Christ has done for all of us on the cross, then His very own righteousness can then be imputed upon all of us where God the Father will then take us back and grant us entrance into heaven once we die and cross over.

The first verse I will list below will perfectly spell this out for us. The rest of the verses will then show us how we have all been born into this world as sinners, and that there is absolutely no one in this world who is truly righteous and holy before the eyes of God the Father.

1. ***"For He made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him." (2 Corinthians 5:21)***
2. ***"Behold, I was brought forth in iniquity, and in sin my mother conceived me." (Psalm 51:5)***
3. ***As it is written: "There is none righteous, no, not one ..." (Romans 3:10)***
4. ***"... for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God ..." (Romans 3:23)***
5. ***"For since by man came death, by Man also came the resurrection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all shall be made alive." (1 Corinthians 15:21-22)***
6. ***"Therefore, just as through one man sin entered the world, and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men, because all sinned ..." (Romans 5:12)***
7. ***"But we are all like an unclean thing, and all our righteousness are like filthy rags; we all fade as a leaf, and our iniquities, like the wind." (Isaiah 64:6)***

Once you really think about and meditate on these specific verses, it just blows the human mind to think that God the Father would allow the very own righteousness of His Son Jesus to be imputed upon us so we can all be made righteous enough before Him to be able to cross over into heaven when we die and cross over – especially when we ourselves have done absolutely nothing to be able to earn or achieve any of this on our own. This is all simply a free and holy gift that is being given to us by the Lord.

The last verse above says that even if we did try to be as good and as perfect as we possibly could before the Lord, that all of our good works would be nothing but as filthy rags before Him because we simply do not

have the ability within our own natural makeups to attain His state of perfection and holiness.

If we are really honest with ourselves, we can all see how we are really sinners before a holy and righteous God, and that no matter how hard we try, there is simply no way we can ever achieve any state of true perfect holiness that would be pleasing enough to God. And again, the apostle Paul in the above verse perfectly sums up that reality even for himself.

However, as Christians, we now have something that the unbeliever does not have on himself. Not only are we born again with the Holy Spirit, who is now residing in our human spirits, but we are now also clothed with the very righteousness of Jesus Christ Himself, which will now be good enough to grant us entrance into heaven once we die and cross over.

***However, there is now one more thing each Christian must get a real grip on after they have fully realized this astounding fact and revelation.***

***Even though we are now all fully clothed with the righteousness of Jesus Christ Himself, and we have now been given a free ticket to heaven once we die and cross over, this does not mean that we can try and abuse or take advantage of this grace and righteousness that we now have upon us from the Lord. We still have to make every concerted effort on our end to try and live a good and righteous life before the Lord.***

***This new found righteousness that we now have in Jesus Christ does not give us the liberty, the right, or the excuse to be able to keep on sinning. We should all still be doing our best to try and live a good and righteous life before the Lord and staying out of any unacceptable sins.***

***And when we do find ourselves falling short or having a hard time in staying out of certain sinful activities, we now have the Holy Spirit Himself, who can now give us His divine power to be able to pull put of any heavier sins that we may have fallen into.***

***Bottom line – once we have become saved and born again through the shed blood of Jesus Christ, we should all do our best to allow God to start the sanctification process within us. And once God the Father starts this sanctification process within each one of us, we should then do our best to live this life the way that He will want us to live it, not the way we or the world will want us to live it.***

The Bible very clearly lays out all of the ways and commandments of our Lord, and exactly what He wants all of us to do, and exactly what He wants all of us to stay away from in this life. We also have the Holy Spirit on the inside of each one of us whose job is to not only **guide us** and **teach us** in this life, but to also **convict us** when we do start to stray and get off into any sinful activities that the Lord will not want us engaging in.

Again, no one person will ever become the 4th person of the Holy Trinity. We will never become perfectly holy like God is, but we should still make every effort on our end to try and live good and righteous life before the Lord so that we can become well pleasing to Him, and so that He will then approve of the way that we have lived our lives down here and conducted ourselves among our fellow man.

Before I get into the actual Scripture verses on how God wants all of us to have a good and righteous walk with Him, here are two good definitions on what the word righteousness means from some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries:

- **Without guilt before God, acting in accord with God's laws**
- **Inherent or imputed guiltlessness before God**

Now I will give you some very good verses from Scripture on the importance that we all try to do the best we can to try and live a good and righteous life before the Lord once we have become saved and born again through the shed blood of Jesus Christ.

## **The Scripture Verses**

I will break these Scripture verses down under 4 separate captions so you can fully grasp what the Lord is trying to tell us on this topic. All of these verses mean exactly what they are saying and they do not need any kind of fancy interpretation.

### **1. Jesus Did Not Come to Destroy the Law – But to Fulfill It**

This first verse I will now list will completely set the stage as far as the law is concerned and what God is expecting from all of us. Though the Bible says that we are no longer under the law, but under grace – this does not mean that we are to fully do away with all of God's moral laws, which are His direct commandments to us on how we are to live in this life.

Granted, there are some laws back in the OT that would not apply in the kind of environment we are now living in. But many of what I call the basic moral laws are still in full play today such as all of the 10 commandments, God's laws on not engaging with anything having to do with the occult, along with staying out of such sins as homosexuality and fornication.

In the OT, they did not have the Holy Spirit living on the inside of them. They thus did not have His power available to them in which to help them overcome some of the sins they were engaging in. Now all NT believers have the Holy Spirit on the inside of them and they thus now have His divine power available to them in which to help them overcome the temptation to sin, or if by chance they have fallen into any type of bad sin, the power of the Holy Spirit to actually pull them out of it and set them free.

Here is this first very powerful verse direct from Jesus Christ Himself:

**"Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to fulfill. For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled. Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven." (Matthew 5:17-20)**

Notice that this is Jesus talking in the New Testament, not God the Father talking in the OT. Jesus is flat out telling us that He still wants all of us to still abide by His Father's basic laws and commandments and that He will expect all of us to do so until **"all is fulfilled"** – which is when we will get the New Heaven and the New Earth after Jesus' millennial rule has ended.

As you will see in the verses that I will list below, all of these basic moral laws and commandments from God the Father are all being given to us for our own good and for our own protection, as the Bible tells us that the wages of sin will be death.

As such, we should all do our best to try and abide by them and keep them as best we can, and when we do run into any problems with any specific sin areas, we have the Holy Spirit Himself to help us get victory over any specific sins that are starting to drag us down.

## 2. God Now Has His Basic Laws Written Into Man's Hearts

Not only did God the Father lay out the basic laws and commandments that He wants all of us to live by, but He has even gone one step further. He now has His basic laws actually written into the hearts of men, along with causing their conscience to actually bear witness to all of it.

In other words, we all have God's basic laws written into our hearts and we all know basic right from basic wrong when we are old enough to fully understand what it is all about. This is why the unsaved sinner will have no excuse on his day of judgment with the Lord. He will know, without any shadow of a doubt, that all of his sins were wrong and that they were going against the will and ways of God. As a result, he will not be able to plead any type of ignorance on his day of judgment with the Lord.

Here are 6 very serious verses about God's laws and why we are to take all of them very, very seriously in this life. The first verse is the one that will tell you that God the Father has His basic laws written into the hearts of men.

1. ***"... who show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness ..." (Romans 2:15)***
2. ***"... I would not have known sin except through the law. For I would not have known covetousness unless the law had said, "You shall not covet." (Romans 7:7)***
3. ***"Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not do it, to him it is sin." (James 4:17)***
4. ***"If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have no sin, but now they have no excuse for their sin." (John 15:22)***
5. ***"I call heaven and earth as witnesses today against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore choose life, that both you and your descendants may live ..." (Deuteronomy 30:19)***
6. ***"Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it. Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it." (Matthew 7:13-14)***



First notice that God has to give us His laws. If He does not tell us what He will be expecting from us, then we will not know for certain what real sin is. But once we do have these laws from God, then we will know for certain what sin is and then He will expect all of us to stay away from it and abide by His commandments. That is why no one will have any type of excuse on their day of judgment with the Lord, as we will all know for certain what is wrong and sinful before the eyes of God.

The second last verse from Deuteronomy is another in-your-face type of verse. In this verse God is telling all of us how it is going to be in this life whether we like it or not.

Bottom line – God is setting before each one of us a choice to make in this life. Either we choose to follow God and His ways and commandments for our lives, or we choose to disobey Him, go our own way, and then end up reaping eventual death when it is all said and done. In other words, it is either God's way or the highway for each one of our lives. There are no middle or neutral grounds with the way this specific verse is being worded by the Lord.

The very last verse will then put the icing on this entire cake. This last verse seems to be talking about our salvation in the Lord. If it is, then the majority of people who have lived on this earth are not going to be making it into heaven.

We obviously will not know for sure what percentage of the human race is going to end up making it into heaven until we get there, but with the words in the last verse stating that **"there are few who find it,"** this leads me to believe that the majority of the human race is not going to end up making it into heaven when it is all said and done.

This last verse in particular has been one of the most bothersome and troubling in all of Scripture for me, as I cannot see how to interpret this verse any other way other than God is referring to our salvation in Him and what is awaiting all of us at the end of our lives.

God is flat out telling us that many people will be choosing the wide and broad way in this life, which is obviously a life of sin and going against the will and ways of God. The straight and narrow road represents the road that God wants all of us to travel on, which is the road of His perfect will and ways for our lives.

As we look out upon this world and all of the people we can see, we can easily see who is trying to travel on the straight and narrow road that God wants all of us to travel on, and those who are out there traveling on their own wide and broad roads.

The people who are traveling on their own wide and broad roads are out there doing anything and everything they want in the flesh, and they do not care who they end up hurting or running over in the process. But sooner or later all of their wide and broad roads will eventually end, and then they will have to face God Almighty Himself for their own final judgments and final fate.

Again, this last verse could not be more scary, more alarming, and more in your face with how God wants us to live in this life. That is why I had the title of this article to read, "Living a Good and Righteous Life Before the Lord," so you will know exactly how God wants all of us to live in this life and what He will be expecting from all of us as we journey through this life.

### **3. God Still Wants All of Us to Practice Righteousness**

As you will see in the first verse I will list below, God still wants all of us to continue to practice righteousness in this life, even though we now have the righteousness of His Son Jesus already imputed on us. And again, this verse is coming from the NT, showing once again that we still have to do the best we can in obeying all of God's basic laws and commandments, which will include some of the basic laws and commandments that were back in the OT.

The rest of the verses will really drive home the point on how important it is that we all seek to walk in the ways of our Lord, and that trying to live a good, holy, and righteous life before the Lord will help bring us true "life" in this life.

Here are some very good verses on how powerful of a thing it can be for all of us if we try to live a good and righteous life before the Lord. Being good, holy, and righteous for the Lord may not be cool with the rest of the world, but it is definitely cool with the Lord – and that is what we will eventually be rewarded on once we enter into heaven and God then hands out His rewards based upon the good works we have done for Him down here, along with how we have lived our lives for Him.

1. ***"In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest: whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother." (1 John 3:10)***
2. ***"In the way of righteousness is life, and in its pathway there is no death." (Proverbs 12:28)***

3. ***"But to him who sows righteousness will be a sure reward. As righteousness leads to life, so he who pursues evil pursues it to his own death." (Proverbs 11:18-19)***
4. ***Thus says the Lord: "Keep justice, and do righteousness ... blessed is the man who does this ... and keeps his hand from doing any evil." (Isaiah 56:1-2)***
5. ***"The way of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord, but He loves him who follows righteousness." (Proverbs 15:9)***
6. ***"The labor of the righteous leads to life, the wages of the wicked to sin. He who keeps instruction is in the way of life, but he who refuses reproof goes astray." (Proverbs 10:16-17)***
7. ***"To do righteousness and justice is more acceptable to the Lord than sacrifice." (Proverbs 21:3)***
8. ***"The righteous man walks in his integrity; his children are blessed after him." (Proverbs 20:7)***
9. ***"When a man's ways please the Lord, he makes even his enemies to be at peace with him. Better is a little with righteousness, than vast revenues without justice." (Proverbs 16:7-8)***
10. ***"Do not be deceived: "Evil company corrupts good habits." Awake to righteousness, and do not sin; for some do not have the knowledge of God." (1 Corinthians 15:33-34)***
11. ***"All unrighteousness is sin ..." (1 John 5:17)***
12. ***"Wash yourselves, make yourselves clean; put away the evil of your doings from before My eyes. Cease to do evil, learn to do good; seek justice, reprove the oppressor; defend the fatherless, plead for the widow." (Isaiah 1:16-17)***
13. ***"Do not enter the path of the wicked, and do not walk in the way of evil. Avoid it, do not travel on it; turn away from it and pass on ... But the path of the just is like the shining sun, that shines ever brighter unto the perfect day. The way of the wicked is like darkness; they do not know what makes them stumble." (Proverbs 4:14-19)***

14. ***"It is an abomination for kings to commit wickedness, for a throne is established by righteousness." (Proverbs 16:12)***

15. ***"Mercy and truth preserve the king, and by lovingkindness he upholds his throne." (Proverbs 20:28)***

Notice how many times the Bible says that righteousness will lead to "life" and that any kind of unrighteousness is actually considered sin in the eyes of God. This means that real righteousness is all black and white. There is only God and the devil, heaven or hell, and good and evil when you really sum everything up.

It now becomes up to each person as to which side of the fence they are going to walk on in this life. Again, Joshua could not have said it any better when he said that you must choose this day who you will serve. You will either decide to serve and follow God and follow His ways and live, or you will choose to follow yourself, other people, or the devil and eventually die.

There are no middle or neutral grounds as far as God is concerned. God has made it as easy as He possibly could. But we only have one lifetime, and a very short lifetime at best, to make that one final and fateful decision which will then determine what the rest of our eternal life will be like once we die and cross over to the other side, which will either be heaven for the saved or hell for the unsaved.

All of these verses are short, quick-to-the-point, and very easy to understand. God simply wants all of us to walk in His righteous ways and again, when we start to run into trouble with certain types of sins, we have both Him and His Holy Spirit to help pull us out of any sins that He will not want us to be getting caught up in.

#### **4. Keeping the Commandments of the Lord**

Part of having a true righteous walk with the Lord is to make sure that we simply obey all of His basic laws and commandments as best we can. These next set of verses will really drive this point home.

Many in the world today want to scoff and make fun of the ways, laws, and commandments of our Lord. They want to be able to live in their flesh, doing anything they can that will feed their flesh. They do not want to be told that adultery, fornication, homosexuality, abortion, and other alternative forms of spirituality are not acceptable to the one and only living God.

As a result, they will either try and make up their own little gods to worship, or they will try and say that they are a god and an island all unto themselves and that they do not need to answer to any type of Higher Power. This is all done so they can rationalize and explain away all of their sinful behaviors before the Lord.

***Again, our Lord could not make things any more simpler and any more easier than with the way that He has everything set up. All we have to do is accept the fact and reality that we are all fallen sinners and that we all need the shed blood of Jesus Christ to be able to receive eternal salvation from God the Father. From there, we are to walk out the rest of our earthly life serving God in the divine destiny that He already has set up for our lives, along with trying to live a good and righteous life before Him.***

***But so many people still to this day cannot see this simple and obvious truth, or if they can, they are still refusing to be told that they have to serve anyone, even if it is God Almighty Himself. Just as pride and major stupidity took out one third of the angelic race, I am afraid that same kind of pride and stupidity is going to be taking out a much larger percentage of the human race when it is all finally said and done.***

Again, these next set of verses are really going to drive home the point that we fully appreciate the basic laws and commandments that God has set out for all of us.

These laws and commandments from the Lord will be telling us what is right and what is wrong in this life. They will act as a **compass** and a **guide** for us so we will know how to live and act in this life for the Lord. These laws and commandments are again, all being given to us for our own good and for our own protection, for without them, we would just keep falling into one pit after another.

1. ***Now behold, one came and said to Him, "Good Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?" So He said to him ... "But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments." (Matthew 19:16-17)***
2. ***"If you keep My commandments, you will abide in My love, just as I have kept My Father's commandments and abide in His love." (John 15:10)***
3. ***"This is love, that we walk according to His commandments." (2 John 1:6)***

4. ***"By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome." (1 John 5:2-3)***
5. ***"Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments." (1 John 2:3)***
6. ***"For the commandment is a lamp, and the law is light; reproofs of instruction are the way of life." (Proverbs 6:23)***
7. ***"He who keeps the commandment keeps his soul, but he who is careless of his ways will die." (Proverbs 19:16)***
8. ***"The highway of the upright is to depart from evil; he who keeps his way preserves his soul." (Proverbs 16:17)***
9. ***"My son, do not forget My law, but let your heart keep My commands; for length of days and long life and peace they will add to you." (Proverbs 3:1)***
10. ***"Observe and obey all these words which I command you, that it may go well with you and your children after you forever, when you do what is good and right in the sight of the Lord your God." (Deuteronomy 12:28)***
11. ***"My son, keep My words, and treasure My commands within you. Keep My commands and live, and My law as the apple of your eye. Bind them on your fingers; write them on the tablet of your heart." (Proverbs 7:1-3)***
12. ***"Oh, that you had heeded My commandments! Then your peace would have been like a river, and your righteousness like the waves of the sea." (Isaiah 48:18)***
13. ***"Unless Your law had been my delight, I would then have perished in my affliction. I will never forget Your precepts, for by them You have given me life." (Psalm 119:92)***
14. ***"Oh, that My people would listen to Me, that Israel would walk in My ways! I would soon subdue their enemies, and turn My hand against their adversaries." (Psalm 81:13-14)***

15. ***"This Book of the Law shall not depart from your mouth, but you shall meditate in it day and night, that you may observe to do according to all that is written in it. For then you will make your way prosperous, and then you will have good success." (Joshua 1:8)***
16. ***"It is good for me that I have been afflicted, that I may learn Your statutes. The law of Your mouth is better to me than thousands of shekels of gold and silver." (Psalm 119:71-72)***
17. ***"Open my eyes, that I may see the wondrous things from Your law. I am a stranger in the earth; do not hide Your commandments from me. My soul breaks with longing for Your judgments at all times." (Psalm 119:18-20)***
18. ***"Great peace have those who love Your law, and nothing causes them to stumble." (Psalm 119:165)***
19. ***"Oh, let me not wander from Your commandments! Your word I have hidden in my heart, that I might not sin against You. Blessed are You, O Lord! Teach me Your statutes ... I will meditate on Your precepts, and contemplate Your ways. I will delight myself in Your statutes; I will not forget Your word." (Psalm 119:10-16)***
20. ***"I will run in the way of Your commandments, for You shall enlarge my heart. Teach me, O Lord, the way of Your statutes, and I shall keep it to the end. Give me understanding, and I shall keep Your law; indeed I shall observe it with my whole heart. Make me walk in the path of Your commandments, for I delight in it." (Psalm 119:32-35)***
21. ***"The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul; the testimony of the Lord is sure, making wise the simple; the statutes of the Lord are right, rejoicing the heart; the commandment of the Lord is pure, enlightening the eyes; the fear of the Lord is clean, enduring forever; the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous altogether, more to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold; sweeter also than honey and the honeycomb. Moreover by them your servant is warned, and in keeping them there is great reward." (Psalm 19:7-11)***

22. ***"Blessed is the man who walks not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stands in the path of sinners, nor sits in the seat of the scornful; but his delight is in the law of the Lord, and in His law he meditates day and night. He shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that brings forth its fruit in its season, whose leaf also shall not wither; and whatever he does shall prosper."* (Psalm 1:1-3)**

When you read each one of these verses one right after the other, it is a real mouthful. God is simply trying to drive home the fact that we seek to obey all of His ways and all of His commandments. If we do, then note some of the incredible blessings that we can receive from the Lord:

- **We will receive life**
- **We will keep and preserve our soul**
- **We can have a long life here on this earth**
- **Great peace will be given to us and it will be like a river**
- **It will go well with our children**
- **It will keep us from perishing**
- **God will subdue our enemies**
- **Our way will be made prosperous and we will have good success**
- **Our heart will be rejoiced**
- **Our eyes will be enlightened**
- **The law will warn us and keep us out of harm's way**

Again, all of God's ways and commandments are all being given to us for our own good and for our own protection. These commandments are not meant to stunt our spiritual growth or steal our joy in the Lord. They are all meant to increase our spiritual growth and increase our peace and joy in the Lord.

As earthly parents, one of the first things we will do with all of our children as they are starting to grow is to tell them what they can and cannot do in this life. We know that if we do not give them fair warning ahead of time as to what they should be staying away from in this life, that we risk them getting seriously hurt, if not possibly killed. We thus give them the basic commandments they are to abide by in this life so we can keep them safe and out of harm's way.

It is the exact same way with God the Father. Except with God the Father, He has full knowledge on exactly what we should all be staying away from in this life since He has absolute perfect knowledge on all things. As such, we should all listen very carefully to what God is trying to tell us in these basic commandments, as they are all being given to us for our own good and protection. God is not trying to hurt us or harm us with all of these basic commandments, He is trying to help us and protect us.



If you really want to see how important it is that we seek to obey all of God's laws and commandments, just take your time and meditate on some of the above verses. King David especially was able to see how important it was that he try and learn the **ways of God** so that he could continue to spiritually grow in Him. That is why some of the above verses are telling us that we will find true life in this life if we can learn how to live righteous lives before the Lord.

## Conclusion

As I said at the top of this article, it is just heart-breaking and gut-wrenching to see so many people in this life choose with their own free wills to walk on the dark side of this life instead of the good and righteous side of this life.

Since God has given each man and each woman a full free will to make their own choices in this life, He really has no other alternative but to sit back and watch this horror show unfold with the people who will end up rejecting Him, His ways, and His message of eternal salvation through His Son Jesus.

***To think that a good percentage of the human race is going to end up in the most horrible place imaginable when they die and cross over, when they could have easily chosen the Lord and His message of eternal salvation for them, is enough to break your heart into a million pieces. I do not believe there is a day or an hour that goes by where God and Jesus are not crying and weeping for the souls who are descending down into hell with no chance of ever being able to make it back out again.***

***God initially created all of these lost souls for Himself, and He now has to watch all of them choose with their own free wills to reject Him and His Son Jesus during the course of their earthly lives. And then when they do die and cross over, He has no other alternative but to let them descend down into the pit of hell itself, as they now have to be held fully accountable for all of the horrible choices they have made in this life.***

As Christians, we do not have to worry about this kind of horrible and final fate. We will all be given full entrance into heaven the minute we die and cross over. But until that final and glorious event actually occurs with each one of us, we should all be doing our best to try and live a good and righteous life before the Lord so that He will be well pleased with us when we do meet Him for our own personal judgments at the Judgment Seat of Christ.



## Worshipping the Lord

Another area where the Holy Spirit will move in on in your sanctification process will be in the area of being able to properly worship the Lord. This will be the area where you can really learn how to worship and praise the Lord in the Spirit. This is a supernatural ability that will be given to you by the Holy Spirit Himself if you are open to receiving this from Him.

Since there are so many different denominations and branches in the Body of Christ today, there obviously are going to be differing levels of the way people will worship the Lord. Some of the more conservative types of denominations will have a much less intense way in which they will worship and sing to the Lord in their services as compared to what you will see in some of the non-denominational, charismatic type services.

I have had numerous Catholics tell me that when they decided to switch from the Catholic setting they were raised up in to a more non-denominational, charismatic type of church, their spiritual senses came in for a major shock the first time they walked into a charismatic service.

The first thing they notice is how much more intense the charismatics will worship, praise, and sing to the Lord in the first part of their services. Sometimes you will see a real live band up on an actual stage with musicians playing guitars, keyboards, and drums, along with one or more singers. You will see people with their hands raised up in the air worshipping, singing, and praising the Lord. You will see some people with tears rolling down their eyes. Other people will be jumping up and down and clapping their hands. And others will literally be running around the church or dancing in the middle of the aisles.

If you have not been raised up with this kind of intensity in the denomination that you have been brought up in, you will will feel like you have just walked into the middle of a hurricane or tornado due to the high level of passion and intensity these people are worshipping and praising the Lord.

For those of you who have been raised up in the more conservative branches in the Body, and are not used to seeing this kind of intensity in the way these people are worshipping and praising the Lord, I will use this article to give you 21 very good verses from the Bible showing you that this type of intensity is definitely biblical, and that these people have not lost their minds or gone too flaky in their walks with the Lord.

What these people are doing are worshipping and praising the Lord in the Spirit, singing in the Spirit, dancing in the Spirit, and running in the Spirit.

This is something that is coming directly from the Holy Spirit and this is all being done **"in the Holy Spirit."** This is literally a supernatural ability that can be imparted to each and every believer by the Holy Spirit Himself if they are open to receiving it.

This first verse I will now list will tell us exactly how true worship is made to the Lord:

***"... the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the Father is seeking such to worship Him. God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth." (John 4:23)***

Notice this verse is telling us that we have to learn how to worship God from our human spirits. The letter **"s"** in the word **"spirit"** is with a small **"s."** This means it is talking about our human spirits. The apostle Paul tells us that we have three parts to our being – body, soul, and spirit.

I believe the Lord is trying to tell us two things with the specific wording of this verse. First, we have to learn how to worship the Lord from our spirit, which means that we have to learn how to worship Him from our heart.

The second thing is that we must learn how to worship the Lord in the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit lives and dwells in our human spirits. The Holy Spirit enters into our human spirits the moment we accept Jesus as our Lord and Savior and have become saved and born again.

***If we are to worship the Lord from our human spirits, and the Holy Spirit is already living in our human spirits, then I believe it is only logical to conclude that the Lord wants us to learn how to worship and praise Him in the Holy Spirit.***

I do not want to come down on some of the other more subdued and less intense ways some people will worship the Lord in some of these other less intense branches, but there is definitely a difference between one person who can worship and praise the Lord in the Spirit and another who is just worshipping the Lord out of his flesh and out of his head.

Again, the ability to be able to truly worship the Lord with this kind of intensity, passion, and love can be imparted to you by the Holy Spirit if you will not be afraid to open yourself up to receive it from Him.

To really be able to receive this kind of ability from the Holy Spirit, the first thing you are going to need is the appropriate verses from Scripture to show you that this kind of intense worship is definitely biblical.

Before I list the actual Scripture verses on this topic, I am going to highlight and bullet point several key phrases that you will see listed in these verses. Here are 8 powerful key phrases that will first of all tell us that God the Father wants us to worship, exalt, and magnify Him and His Holy Name:

- **Worship the Father in spirit and truth**
- **Worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness**
- **Worship at His footstool**
- **Let us worship and bow down**
- **All the earth shall worship You**
- **Give unto the Lord the glory due to His name**
- **Exalt the Lord our God**
- **Magnify His name**

Here are 5 very good phrases on us being able to give thanks to the Lord:

- **Give thanks to the Lord for His goodness**
- **Give thanks to the Lord, for He is God**
- **Magnify Him with thanksgiving**
- **Enter His gates with thanksgiving**
- **Come before His presence with thanksgiving**

Part of what will be included in being able to worship the Lord will also be praising Him. Here are 7 key phrases all pointing out that praising the Lord should be something that we all learn how to do on a regular basis:

- **I will bless the Lord at all times**
- **His praise shall continually be in my mouth**
- **Let the high praises of God be in their mouth**
- **Great is the Lord and greatly to be praised**
- **Praise God in His sanctuary**
- **Praise Him for His mighty acts**
- **Praise Him according to His excellent greatness**

These next 11 phrases will all point out that it is also biblical that we sing to the Lord, and that God will have no problems with you if you want to sing with some level of intensity in your singing to Him:

- **Sing to the Lord**
- **Sing praises to God**
- **I will sing praises**
- **Sing praises with understanding**
- **Sing out the honor of His name**
- **Praise the name of God with a song**
- **I will sing of Your power**
- **Let them sing aloud in their beds**
- **Praise Him with stringed *instruments* and flutes**

- **Praise Him with loud cymbals**
- **I will play music before the Lord**

These next 3 verses will show you that it is also biblical if you want to dance before the Lord when you are worshiping, praising, and singing before Him:

- **Praise Him with the timbrel and dance**
- **Let them praise His name with dance**
- **Then David danced before the Lord with all his might**

I know some people may think this kind of higher intensity in the way some people like to worship, praise, sing, or dance to the Lord may be a bit on the extreme side – but strongly consider this analogy.

Next time you are watching a sporting event on TV such as a college or professional football, basketball, or baseball game, watch what happens when the cameras start to pan out into the crowd when one team gets ready to score a touchdown, hit that winning shot from the basketball court, or drive in that winning run in the bottom of the ninth inning in a baseball game.

When the cameras start to pan out into the crowd in these kinds of climatic moments, you will literally see just about everyone standing up, clapping their hands, and yelling, screaming, and shouting at the tops of their lungs – all because their team is about to win the game, or make an important touchdown, goal, or hit in order to help them win the game. And all of this kind of **maximum intensity** is being shown and expressed over just a simple sports game.

***If we can have these kinds of maximum intense emotions, thoughts, words, and feelings over who is going to win a simple sports game, then how much more should we have this kind of maximum intensity in the way that we worship, praise, and give thanks to our one and only Lord and Savior?***

For those of you who may be new to all of this as a result of just getting saved, or as a result of having decided to switch from one denomination to another, just realize this higher level of worship that you will see manifested in these types of services is not something that the Lord will expect you to be able to do overnight.

In the Miscellaneous Section of our site, we have another article titled, "Worship and Praise in Charismatic Churches." In this article, I answered an email from a girl who was trying to make the transition and change from the Catholic church that she was brought up in to a new non-denominational church that she decided to join.

The first problem she had was feeling inferior and not good enough before the Lord because she could not worship, praise, or sing to Him like some of the other people were able to do in their services. She was uncomfortable and uneasy with all of it because it was such a big and drastic change from what she had been raised up in.

The first thing you really have to grab a hold of when learning how to enter into true worship with the Lord is that this is a very individual and personal matter between you and God. Do not ever compare yourself with anyone else in how they worship and praise the Lord.

We are all operating at different levels of spiritual development with the Lord. Some people are much more outgoing, bold, and brazen in their walks and in their personalities with the Lord. They are not self-conscious, and they have no problems in being able to let go with some level of intensity in the way they worship the Lord in a public setting.

However, there are others who are much more self-conscious, shy, and timid in their walks and in their personalities with the Lord. They do not have the boldness or courage to be able to sing out loud or raise up their hands when worshiping the Lord in a public type of setting like this.

If you fall into this kind of category, do not beat yourself up with condemnation or think of yourself as not being good enough before the Lord. If you will notice in the wording in the first verse that I have listed at the top of this article – that we have to learn how to worship God the Father in spirit and in **“truth.”**

The words in **“truth”** could be referring to the fact that we learn how to be true to ourselves and learn how to worship the Lord from a true and pure heart – not from a heart of trying to be like everyone else when it is not coming natural to us at the level of spiritual development that we may be currently operating at with Him.

Some people will progress at a faster rate in certain areas of their walk with the Lord than others will. Some people will be able to easily and quickly jump right in to being able to worship and praise the Lord with the more intense kind of singing and worship that you will see in some of these types of services.

If you are having a hard time in being able to release to the Lord with this kind of intensity in the way you want to worship and praise Him, especially in a public type of setting, then my advice to you would be not to worry about it, and let the Lord gradually bring you up into these higher levels of worship and praise at the pace that He will want to do it in.

Be guided by the Holy Spirit on this. The Holy Spirit will gradually work His boldness, courage, passion, and intensity into you where you will then be able to do this without feeling overly self-conscious or intimidated. Let Him work all of this into you at the pace that He will want to work with.

What you will find in this specific area is that the closer you get to the Lord in your own personal relationship with Him, the less self-conscious you will become in how you interact with Him and how you share Him and His ways with other people. The closer you get to the Lord, the better you will get to know Him. And the better you get to know Him, the more you will want to express your feelings, thoughts, and emotions to Him.

And once this starts to happen, you will then start to have a natural and holy desire to want to worship and praise this awesome God of ours. Once you start to really learn more about the Lord as a result of your own personal adventures and walk with Him, the more He will start to blow you away with His goodness, with His awesomeness, with His love, and with how much He really does care for you and how far He will always go to take proper care of you.

***Once you break into the real realm and reality of what our Lord is really like and all about – your mind, your heart, and your spirit will want to bow down and worship Him, and Him alone. You will simply want to give and express, to the best of your abilities, all the praise and worship that will only be due to Him.***

***You will come to realize that every fiber of your being and every ounce of your existence is solely and totally dependent upon Him – and that there is nothing on this earth that can even begin to compare to Him and the depth and awesomeness of His personality.***

***Once your mind comes into direct contact with who God really is and what He is really all about, then it will become much easier for you to be able to worship Him in the way these Scripture verses are telling you to do.***

But again, let the Holy Spirit slowly raise you up to this level if you are not there yet. If you have committed to making a full surrender with the Lord where He is now in complete control of your life, and you have now given Him a full and solid green light to enter you into His sanctification process for your life, then this ability to be able to properly worship and praise Him will be given to you by the Holy Spirit over a certain period of time.



## The Scripture Verses

So that you can get the full power effect of these verses, I am going to go ahead and run all of these verses together one right after the other.

Once you read all of these verses one right after the other, then you will be able to understand and witness to some of the more intense levels of worship and praise that you will see in some of the non-denominational, charismatic type of churches.

1. "... the true worshipers will worship the Father in spirit and truth; for the Father is seeking such to worship Him. God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth." (*John 4:23*)
2. "You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power; For You created all things, and by Your will they exist and were created." (*Revelation 4:11*)
3. "Give unto the Lord the glory due to His name; worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness." (*Psalms 29:2*)
4. "The Lord reigns; let the peoples tremble! He dwells between the cherubim; let the earth be moved! The Lord is great in Zion, and He is high above all the peoples. **Let them praise Your great and awesome name – He is holy .... Exalt the Lord our God, and worship at His footstool; for He is holy.**" (*Psalms 99:1,5*)
5. "He brought them out of darkness and the shadow of death, and broke their chains in pieces. **Oh, that men would give thanks to the Lord for His goodness, and for His wonderful works to the children of men!** For He has broken the gates of bronze, and cut the bars of iron in two." ([Psalms 107:14-16](#))
6. "You are my God, and I will praise You; You are my God, I will exalt You. Oh, give thanks to the Lord, for He is good! For His mercy endures forever." (*Psalms 118:28*)
7. "I will bless the Lord at all times; His praise shall continually be in my mouth. My soul shall make its boast in the Lord ... Oh, magnify the Lord with me, and let us exalt His name together." ([Psalms 34:1,3](#))
8. "Great is the Lord, and greatly to be praised; and His greatness is unsearchable. One generation shall praise Your works to

- another, and shall declare Your mighty acts." (*Psalm 145:3*)
9. "I will praise the name of God with a song, and will magnify Him with thanksgiving." (*Psalm 69:30*)
10. **"I will sing to the Lord as long as I live; I will sing praise to my God while I have my being.** May my meditation be sweet to Him; I will be glad in the Lord." (*Psalm 104:33*)
11. "Praise God in His sanctuary; Praise Him in His mighty firmament! Praise Him for His mighty acts; Praise Him according to His excellent greatness! Praise Him with the sound of the trumpet; Praise Him with the lute and harp! Praise Him with the timbrel and dance; Praise Him with stringed instruments and flutes! Praise Him with loud cymbals; Praise Him with high sounding cymbals! Let everything that has breath praise the Lord. Praise the Lord!" (*Psalm 150:1-6*)
12. **"Oh, sing to the Lord a new song!** For He has done marvelous things; His right hand and His holy arm have gained Him the victory." (*Psalm 98:1*)
13. **"But I will sing of Your power; yes, I will sing aloud of Your mercy in the morning;** for You have been my defense and refuge in the day of my trouble. To You, O my Strength, I will sing praises; for God is my defense, the God of my mercy." (*Psalm 59:16*)
14. "Oh, clap your hands, all you peoples! Shout to the Lord with the voice of triumph! For the Lord Most High is awesome; He is a great King over all the earth ... Sing praises to God, sing praises! ... For God is the King of all the earth; sing praises with understanding." (*Psalm 47:1,6*)
15. "Oh, give thanks to the Lord! Call upon His name; make known His deeds among the peoples. Sing to Him, sing psalms to Him; talk of all His wondrous works. Glory in His holy name; let the hearts of those rejoice who *seek the Lord*. Seek the Lord and His strength, seek His face evermore. Remember His marvelous works which He has done, His wonders, and the judgments of His mouth ..." (*Psalm 105:1-5*)
16. **"Make a joyful shout to the Lord, all you lands! Serve the Lord with gladness, come before His presence with singing.** Know that the Lord, He is God; it is He who has made us, and not we ourselves. We are His people and the sheep of His pasture. **Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and**

**into His courts with praise. Be thankful to Him, and bless His name.** For the Lord is good; His mercy is everlasting, and His truth endures to all generations." (*Psalms 100:1-5*)

17. "Oh come, let us sing to the Lord! Let us shout joyfully to the Rock of our salvation. Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving; let us shout joyfully to Him with psalms. For the Lord is the great God, and the great King above all gods ... Oh come, let us worship and bow down; let us kneel before the Lord our Maker. For He is our God, and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand." (*Psalms 95:1,6*)
18. "Make a joyful shout to God, all the earth! Sing out the honor of His name; make His praise glorious. Say to God, "How awesome are Your works! Through the greatness of Your power Your enemies shall submit themselves to You. All the earth shall worship You and sing praises to You; they shall sing praises to Your name." (*Psalms 66:1-4*)
19. "Oh, sing to the Lord a new song! Sing to the Lord, all the earth. Sing to the Lord, bless His name; proclaim the good news of His salvation from day to day. Declare His glory among the nations, His wonders among all peoples. For the Lord is great and greatly to be praised; He is to be feared above all gods ... Give to the Lord glory and strength. Give to the Lord the glory due His name; bring an offering, and come into His courts. Oh, worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness! Tremble before Him, all the earth." (*Psalms 96:1,7*)
20. "Let them praise His name with dance; let them sing praises to Him with the timbrel and harp. For the Lord takes pleasure in His people; He will beautify the humble with salvation. Let the saints be joyful in glory; let them sing aloud on their beds. Let the high praises of God be in their mouth ... (*Psalms 149:3*)
21. Then David danced before the Lord with all his might ...  
"Therefore I will play music before the Lord. And I will be even more undignified than this, and will be humble in my own sight."  
(*2 Samuel 6:14, 21*)

When you study all the above verses, and then match it up with the way some people will worship, praise, sing, or dance to the Lord in some of these more intense types of worship services, you will see that everything they are doing is not only biblical, but right on target with the way the Lord would like all of us to be able to truly worship Him.

***The very last verse from King David really sums all of it up when it says that he danced before the Lord with all of his might and that he was not worrying about being dignified.***

***So the next time you see people running in the Spirit, dancing in the Spirit, or singing intensely in the Spirit, remember what the greatest king that Israel has ever had has just stated – that he was not afraid to dance and worship before the Lord with all of his might!***

## Conclusion

When you read all of the above verses one right after the other, you can really feel the power there is if you can learn how to worship the Lord with some level of intensity. But again, for those of you who are just not there yet, do not get discouraged or dismayed because you cannot worship as freely or as intensely as some of the other people around you may be doing in a church service. God will be looking at your heart on all of this, not at how you compare with all of the other people around you.

The other thing to note on all of this is that you do not have to be in a church service to be able to worship the Lord. You can literally do this anytime and at anyplace. You can do it while riding in your car, in the privacy of your own bedroom, or in the privacy of your office at work. You can do it quietly all by yourself so no one else will hear you if you happen to be in close proximity to other people.

There will be times that the Holy Spirit will come up on you and prompt you to just all of a sudden want to worship and give praise, honor, and glory to the Lord for just a few short moments. You will find yourself all of a sudden wanting to thank God for how He is handling your life or for something that He may have just helped you out with. Sometimes the Holy Spirit will initiate it Himself. Other times you will want to personally do it yourself.

For those of you who know how to truly worship the Lord in the Spirit, you know what a wonderful blessing and experience it really is to be able to do this. Once you learn how to go into a true worship mode with the Lord through the Holy Spirit, it will help draw you that much closer to God in your own personal relationship with Him.

When you look at how our world and society has been set up, you see many people literally idolizing and worshiping other people who have become famous in their public arenas. You have politicians, movie stars, singing stars, and sports stars all getting a certain amount of public adulation, worship, and praise from people all over the world for what they have been able to accomplish in their particular fields of expertise.

***If people can show that kind of intensity in the way they worship, praise, and adulate successful movie, sports or singing stars, then why can't we do the exact same thing with God Almighty Himself?***

***No matter how great some of these accomplishments may have been by some of these public stars, the bottom line is that they are just as human, just as mortal, and just as fallen as the rest of us are.***

***This is why the Bible tells us that we are not to glory in other men or in all of their accomplishments, but only onto the Lord Himself, since He is the only perfect Being and God in existence.***

There is nothing wrong in celebrating other people's accomplishments and achievements in their fields of expertise such as the sports arenas or the performing arts arenas. God Himself loves to watch people try and become the best they can at whatever He has gifted them to be able to do. But as with everything else in this life, we have to keep all of this in proper perspective and proper balance.

No human is ever going to become close to becoming the fourth person of the Holy Trinity. No human will ever get close to being like God or becoming God.

***No matter how successful other people may become with whatever God may have initially gifted them with, we always have to remember that all of these movie and sports stars are fallen and imperfect creatures just like the rest of us are, and that they do not need to be put up on altars and pedestals that will rival our Lord.***

***Some people will worship, praise, and follow after these other movie, singing, and sports stars more than they will worship, praise, and follow the Lord Himself. The Bible tells us that our God is a very jealous God and that He will not allow Himself to be replaced by other people or by other people's accomplishments and successes in this life.***

Just realize that as you continue to grow and mature in your walk with the Lord, the Holy Spirit will start to illuminate your mind and open up your eyes to all of this. And one of the areas that He will definitely be including in your sanctification process with the Lord will be helping you out on how to truly worship the Lord from your heart and from your spirit.

## Mindset – Being Transformed by the Renewing of Your Mind

The Bible tells us that one of the highest, ultimate goals that God has in store for each one of us is our transformation in Him – and this transformation is accomplished by the renewing of our mind. The Bible tells us that God wants to sanctify us and transform us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ. He wants to make us into a better and more holy people, both on the inside and the outside.

Here is the specific verse from Scripture that will tell us that this kind of transformation is actually done by the renewing of our minds in the Lord:

***"And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God." (Romans 12:2)***

I believe this transformation process has 3 major steps to it. They are as follows:

### 1. Knowledge From The Word

The first thing each Christian must know is exactly what it is that God wants to change about us. If you do not know exactly what it is God wants to do with you in this sanctification-transformation process, then you will have a very hard time in being able to fully cooperate with Him once He does try to start the renewal and transformation process on the inside of you.

There are a million and one self-help books on the market, but there is only one Book that will tell you exactly what it is God wants to do with you on the inside to change you for the better – and that Book is the Holy Bible. There are no other books out there that will tell you the specific and exact points that God is looking to target to make this transformation occur in the way that He would really like.

The Bible tells us that this sanctification-transformation process is actually done by the Holy Spirit. **However, the Holy Spirit will not start this transformation process in you until He has something to work with – and that something is knowledge – and that knowledge can only be obtained from the Bible.**

God expects you to play a direct part in this transformation process if He is going to start to work it in you. In the three steps that will get this transformation process going for you – you will be responsible for doing the first two steps. If you are willing to put some quality time and effort in doing these first two steps, then God will do His part, and He will then actually do **all of step 3** for you in order to make this kind of transformation really possible to achieve in this lifetime.

The first step will be to study the Bible for the specific points that God will be looking to target to change you into the kind of person He really wants you to become in Him. Since many of these verses pertaining to all of this are scattered throughout the entire Bible, I am going to list, in subsequent articles, some of the most powerful verses in all of Scripture – showing you exactly what godly and saintly qualities God will want to work and impart into the very core of your personality.

King David tells us in the Old Testament that we are to meditate on the Word of God. To meditate means to think about, to chew on, to try and figure out what God is trying to tell us in His Word – and then to try and see how these divine truths can be applied in our daily life, and how we can get some of these positive qualities worked and imparted into our personalities.

If you will spend some good, quality time really studying and meditating on what is in these specific verses I will be listing in these other articles in this Sanctification section of our site, you will then have right at your fingertips exactly what it is that God wants to start working into your personality. And once you have the basic knowledge of what these positive and godly qualities are going to be that God will be looking to impart into you – then you will be ready for step two.

The reason I have the word **“mindset”** listed in the title of this article is because you have to know exactly what it is that you have to **“set your mind on”** before God can really kick this transformation process into full gear – hence the word **“mindset.”**

You have to learn how to develop **“right thinking”** in the Lord, but you cannot develop right thinking in the Lord unless you first know exactly what it is that you should be thinking right about. The Scripture verses that will be listed in these subsequent articles will show you all the things that God will want you to think right about in order to help you with this renewing of your mind.

## 2. Put On Positive Qualities – Put Away Negative Qualities

You will find two key words that will be repeated several times in many of the Scripture verses that will follow in these other articles. These two key words are **“putting on”** and **“putting away.”**

The Bible tells us that we are the ones who are to try and **“put on”** the good and godly qualities that God will want us to have operating in our personalities, and to **“put away”** all of the bad and negative qualities that He will not want us to have operating in our personalities.

This step right here is where many Christians are missing the boat. They have been walking with the Lord for years and they wonder why there has not been many changes in the very cores of their personalities. Where is the love, joy, peace, sound mind, and self-control that the Bible promises me once I fully commit my life to the Lord? Why is it that I still have a problem in controlling my temper, my cussing, and my critical and judgmental spirit?

Once you know the Bible tells you to have self-control over your bad temper and over your condescending and critical attitudes – then it will be your job at this point to **make some kind of concerted effort to actually “put away” these kinds of negative and destructive qualities from your personality.**

Example – say you have a problem with a bad temper. The least little thing will set you off. The first step, as described above, is to find the specific verses from the Bible on this topic so you can see exactly what God’s Word has to say about having bad and quick tempers. Once you know what God’s opinion really is on the matter through His Word – then you will have the appropriate knowledge to work with in order to try and tackle this problem.

Once you see in God’s Word that He does not want His people having bad and quick tempers – then you will now be ready for step 2. Now here is where your part will really come into play.

Now that you know God wants your bad temper removed from your personality – He will now expect you to try and put away this bad and negative quality when it does want to erupt. You will now have to start to engage with your quick and bad temper every single time you find yourself in a situation that will start to trigger its release. You will now have to make some kind of attempt on your end to **“put away”** your bad temper and **“put on”** the quality of self-control.



Say someone has just cut you off in traffic. Your normal response may be to start cussing at this person and try to flip him off if you can get close enough to him to do it. Your bad temper has now been fully triggered like it does every time someone cuts you off in traffic.

At this point, you have to make the best effort you can to try and control the release of your bad temper. You may have to literally bite your tongue to keep all the cuss words from flying out of your mouth. When your bad temper releases on you, it is like a fire that explodes out of your belly. Once this fire starts to explode, you have to make a very strong and concerted effort to neutralize it before the fire hits your mouth and causes you to start cussing.

You will have to try and put on the godly quality of self-control in order to try and douse the fire – like pouring cold water on a hot fire. You will have to tell yourself, and give yourself a pep talk that you will directly engage with your bad temper every single time you find yourself in a situation that will trigger its release.

At first, you may not have much success, because the release of your bad temper has become such an automatic bad habit. It has become an automatic response to certain situations. But if you keep at it, over the course of time you will start to get more self-control over it, and you will then be able to dramatically reduce the number of times that you will actually go off.

The reason your bad temper triggers so easily is because you are weak in the quality of self-control. Self-control is one of the qualities that God wants to impart and work into your personality. You will see this positive quality mentioned numerous times in the verses to follow in these other articles.

By attempting to put on this very positive quality into your personality, you will have the live ammunition you will need to not only be able to overcome a bad and nasty temper, but other bad and negative qualities such as too much of a critical and judgmental spirit, an unforgiving spirit, and too much pride, arrogance, and haughtiness. The quality of self-control can really help you **“put away”** many of these bad and toxic qualities that the Lord really does not want operating in your personality.

The same approach goes for trying to incorporate positive qualities into your personality. The Bible tells us that God wants us to be loving, kind, generous, and gentle people.

Some people do not have many of these positive qualities operating in them due to all of the bad things that may have happened to them in this life. What God wants you to do anyway is to try and **“put on”** some of these positive and godly qualities. Try to the best of your abilities to

become more loving, more patient, more kind – even if you do not feel like it. If you will make some kind of decent and concerted effort to do this on your end, then God will start to do His part – which will now lead us into step 3.

Each one of us only has a certain amount of mental and emotional strength in our own personal makeups. We can only go so far with step 2. We can only get ourselves to a certain point in being able to become more loving, more kind, and more patient. Our best is obviously not going to be good enough to get this transformation process properly completed to the degree that the Lord would really like in this lifetime.

God wants to make us more loving, patient, kind, and peaceful than we could ever get ourselves to be by using our own natural strength. So how can the Lord do this?

If we have spent good, quality time studying the Bible in reference to the changes God wants to make into our personalities – and we have tried to the best of our abilities to put on the good, godly, and saintly qualities that He would really like to have operating in our personalities – then how can God get us up to the level that He is really looking for as you will see in the Scripture verses to follow?

Since our best is obviously not going to be good enough – how can God complete this transformation process to the degree that would really please Him in this lifetime? This will now lead us into step 3.

### 3. By the Power of the The Holy Spirit

As you will see in some of the verses to follow, this transformation process is completed **“by the power of the Holy Spirit.”** The Holy Spirit lives on the inside of each believer and it is His job to mold, shape, and transform us into the kind of holy and righteous people that God the Father would really like all of us to become in Him.

Many Christians already know this. They then wonder why there has not been much change in their personalities after they have been saved. Where is the Holy Spirit? How come He is not removing some of my negative qualities? How come I am still crabby, miserable, and depressed all of the time?

The reason there has been little, if any true changes in a believer’s personality after they initially get saved, is because they have not spent enough time doing their part in steps 1 and 2. They have not spent enough quality time in the Word of God to learn exactly what it is that God wants to change about them – and then they have not made any real concerted effort on their end to try and change themselves for the better,

to try and put on the godly and saintly qualities that God the Father wants them to have operating in their personalities.

***If each Christian would do their part as described in the above first two steps – then God the Father would only be too anxious to complete this transformation process for you through the power of His Holy Spirit.***

***What will happen in this third step is that God the Father will then start to impart His peace, His love, His joy, His kindness, His patience, and His perseverance into your personality through the Holy Spirit. And these will be His divine qualities and attributes being imparted into you – not yours!***

You only have a certain amount of love within your own natural personality to give and to express to others. However, once God starts to release His love into your personality – then you will be able to love others in the way that the Lord would really like. Then you can really start loving your children, your spouse, and your friends to the degree that you would really like.

Once God's divine qualities and attributes start to enter into your personality – then many of the negative qualities that you have in you will start to **wash away**. Once you have God's love, joy, and peace starting to flow through your personality – then you will no longer feel crabby, depressed, and miserable like you did before.

God's love, joy, and peace will now be replacing those negative emotions. You cannot feel depressed and unhappy if the love and joy of God is operating in your personality through the Holy Spirit. This is not to say we will never get crabby, irritable, or down at times. We all live in a fallen and cursed world and we are living in bodies that are slowly dying and corrupting.

But when God really kicks this transformation process into full gear for you, the down days will not last as long as they used to. You will not have as many of them and when you do, they will not last as long as they use to. With God's peace now flowing through you, you will find yourself not getting as upset as often as you did in the past. You may still lose it from time to time, but not to the same degree and frequency that you use to.

One of the greatest accomplishments anyone can achieve in this life is to find true inner peace, happiness, and contentment in this life.

***True happiness can only be found on the inside of your being in your connection and personal relationship with the Lord. All of the material wealth and goods that are out there for***

***the taking will not give you this kind of true inner peace, happiness, and fulfillment.***

All you have to do is look around you and see all of the unhappy, depressed, and miserable people that are out there – especially those who are rich and supposedly have it “all.” Ever wonder why so many of the Hollywood movie stars are doing drugs and seeing therapists? They are finding out that all of their material wealth, fame, and notoriety are not giving them the true inner peace, happiness, and fulfillment they thought that this kind of life would bring them.

***As born-again, Spirit-filled Christians, we all know that this true inner peace and happiness can only be found on the inside of our beings through establishing a close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord. There is no other way! Nothing else in this life will give us this kind of true inner peace and happiness.***

However, many Christians are not finding this true inner peace and happiness. The Bible talks about it, the preachers talk about it on Sunday, but many are still not finding it. Why? Once you get saved, that is just the beginning.

***After you get saved, God expects you to grow, develop, and mature in your walk with Him. Many Christians are missing out on this sanctification-transformation process that is available to them through the power of the Holy Spirit. This sanctification process is what will really lead you into true inner peace, happiness, and fulfillment that everyone is looking for these days.***

However, God is not going to give you a free lunch on this process. You will have to be willing to do your part before God will be willing to do His part.

The Bible tells us that with the measure we use, will be the measure measured back to us. In other words, if we want God’s best, then we have to give Him our best. When it comes to this sanctification-transformation process – we have to give God our best by reading and studying the Word for the changes that He will want to make with us – and then make our own attempt to put on the good and godly qualities that He will want us to have – and then to put away all of the bad and negative qualities that He will not want us to have.

***If we give the Lord our best in doing both of the above, then God will give us His best – and God’s best will be when He starts to transmit and impart His saintly and godly qualities***

***right up into the middle of our personalities though the Holy Spirit.***

***Think about this incredible possibility – that God Himself can literally impart and transmit part of His divine nature into our personalities through the Holy Spirit if we are willing to work with Him during this transformation-sanctification process.***

One last point before I give you all of the power verses in other articles showing you the godly and saintly qualities that God will want to try and work into us. Once you read all of the qualities that God would really like to have instilled in us, some of you may get a bit dismayed and distraught after you read what is in these Scripture verses. You may feel overwhelmed, realizing that you may be a long way off in being able to have some of these positive godly qualities worked and imparted into your personality.

Some Christians read these verses and feel so overwhelmed – they do not even feel it is worth trying for because these ideals just seem to be too high to strive for. The one thing we all have to realize is that every single one of us is flawed to some degree. We all have our character flaws and rough edges. No exceptions. We all have issues that need to be dealt with, and we all need God's transformation-sanctification process to occur in our lives so the Lord can transform us into the holy righteous saints He really wants all of us to become in Him.

This sanctification process is not done overnight. This is a process that will occur over the rest of your earthly life. If you are willing to work with the Lord in this process, God will then gradually and progressively transform and sanctify you to make you into the kind of person that He really wants you to become in Him.

***Your reward for allowing God to do this type of inner sanctifying work in your life will be a joy, a peace, a love, and a zest for life that you never knew was really possible to obtain in this life. You will find true inner peace, happiness, and fulfillment. You will find what everyone else is looking for these days and cannot find, and many people will be drawn to you as a result.***

Many nonbelievers have stated that what drew them to certain Christians that ended up getting them saved was the peace, joy, and love that seemed to be operating through their personalities. They said they were drawn to those personality qualities like a magnet.

Not only will you be more happy and fulfilled by allowing God to do this with you, but you will also be a joy for others, and they will be drawn to the light of God that will be shining through you.

As a result, many people, including other Christians will start asking you what it is that you have operating in you. Why are you always so happy and upbeat? How can you have so much peace and contentment in your life in this crazy and tumultuous world we now live in?

***As a result of this kind of inner spiritual transformation, you will be able to lead many more nonbelievers into eternal salvation through Jesus, and disciple many other believers into a deeper walk with the Lord.***

This sanctification process is available to all believers. God wants to do this with every single one of us. The problem is that many of God's people are not willing to do their part in it. As a result, the Body has many flaky hypocritical representatives for God who are doing more harm than good.

They are turning people away from the Lord because they are not truly manifesting God's nature and personality though their own personalities – and this is all due because God could not properly get the sanctification process started in their lives due to ignorance and lack of knowledge on their part on how to actually enter into it, or possibly due to open rebellion and stubbornness on their part.

They may not be open to admitting to God what some of their problems and character flaws really are. They may be full of too much pride and arrogance to admit they have any character flaws that really need to be dealt with, and God thus will not be able to properly reach them to start this sanctification process within them. As a result, they will end up presenting a haughty, prideful, arrogant, and know-it-all witness that will do nothing but turn people off and away from the Lord.

If you decide you really want God to start this sanctification process within you after reading all of the Scripture verses that will be listed in these additional articles – all you have to do is go to God in prayer and tell Him that He has a full and solid green light from you to start this process.

Tell God that you really want this transformation-sanctification process to start to occur in your life – and that you will be open to allowing it to occur over the rest of your life down here on this earth.

***Your job will be:***

- **To get into the Word and study the verses that will give you the knowledge on what positive qualities God will**

**want to impart into you and what negative qualities that He will want to take out of you. The verses that will be listed in the articles to follow will go a long way in giving this specific knowledge to you.**

- **Make the best attempts you can to “put on” the good, positive, and godly qualities that God will want you to have operating in your personality – and then “put away” all of the bad, negative, and destructive qualities that He will not want you to have operating in your personality.**
- **And then be open and sensitive to any communication that you may receive from God on any specific areas He may want to work with you on. God will let you know exactly what these specific areas are going to be and exactly how He will want to deal with each one of them.**

When this starts to occur, it may be a bit painful at times. It’s hard for many of us to admit to anyone, including ourselves or to God, that we may have problems in certain areas of our personality. But let God do His inner surgery on you through the Holy Spirit and you will be much better off for it in the long run.

The rest of the articles listed in our Sanctification Section will arm you with the knowledge that you will need to really enable God to start this sanctification process within you.

***Remember, the Holy Spirit needs something to work with – and that something is knowledge – and these Scripture verses will be giving you this knowledge. These verses are the major door openers that will get God to start the sanctification process within you and change your life for the better.***

## You Are What You Think

The first two articles we have listed in this section titled, "Sanctification" and "Mindset: Being Transformed by the Renewing of Your Mind," all set the stage for you showing you that it is the will of God for your life that you let Him enter you into a sanctification process in order that He may fully consecrate you to Himself and start to mold, shape, and transform you into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ.

In this sanctification process, one of the first things you will find the Lord will want to do with you is to try and put right thinking into your mind and thought process. [Joyce Meyer](#) has a very catchy phrase when describing this. She has said that too many people have "**stinkin thinkin.**"

***What you choose to think about and dwell on in this life will make or break you as to what type of person you will end up becoming in this life.***

Leave it to God the Father to perfectly capture, in one simple one-line sentence from the Bible, the secret to being able to have good mental health in this life. When I first saw this verse back in the Old Testament, it literally blew off the page at me. As soon as I saw it, I saw incredible amounts of revelation behind it.

Many Christians have never heard of this verse since it is back in the Old Testament in the Book of Proverbs. This powerful verse should be memorized by all Christians, as it is giving us a major spiritual secret in being able to acquire good mental health in the Lord.

Here is the New King James Version of this verse:

***"For as he thinks in his heart, so is he." (Proverbs 23:7)***

The key word in this verse is the word "**thinks.**" The word "**thinks**" is telling you that God is targeting your thought process – what you think about on a daily basis.

***Interpretation – you are what you think! You can become what you think!***

This principle is easily seen in our world today. You can really tell who is properly operating on this principle in the way the Lord has intended for all of us to operate with it and who is not.

The people who always seem to be more happy, upbeat, and fulfilled with their lives are the people who have a good sound mind and who are



always thinking about and dwelling on the more positive things in this life. They choose, with their own free wills, to dwell on the more positive side of this life as versus always thinking and dwelling on the darker and negative side of this life.

The people who are not happy and fulfilled, and who are always pessimistic and depressed all the time, and have negative attitudes towards anybody and anything, are all choosing to think and dwell on the negative side of this life.

Granted, this cursed and fallen world in which we all live in has a mixture of both life and death in it. Jesus Himself said that we would all have to go through various types of trials and tribulations in this life from time to time.

However, there is a flip side to this coin. On the one side of the coin is the darker side of this life, but on the other side of this coin is the good, positive, and brighter side of this life. It is not all death, doom, and destruction. Even in the worse case scenarios and situations, there is always a hope and a light at the end of that storm cloud tunnel. As Christians, we all have God Almighty Himself on our side to help us take on any storm clouds that may come our way in this life.

The difference between these two types of people is in their **thought life**. The people who are always happy, upbeat, and positive have chosen to look on the brighter side of things, even in some of the worse case scenarios imaginable.

The negative type of people have chosen to think and dwell on all of the bad things that can happen or go wrong in this life. No matter what good may come their way, they will always think that something better could have come their way. As a result of all of this negative and morbid type of thinking in their thought process, nothing ever makes them happy or content because nothing is ever good enough for them.

***The Bible is very clearly telling us in the above verse that we can all choose what to think about and dwell on. We do not have to become slaves to negative and pessimistic type thinking. In other words, we can choose to think about what we want to think about!***

***Our thinking and thought process does not control us – we control it! Negative type thinking can be broken. For many, it has become an actual mental stronghold because they have been mired down into this type of negative thinking for such a long period of time.***

However, as you will see in some of the Scripture verses I will list below, the Bible tells us that we can actually take **"captive"** what we think about. The verse that will give us this revelation says we have to bring every thought into captivity to the obedience of Jesus.

***What this means is that we are directly responsible for choosing what we think about and dwell on – and then make sure that our thinking always lines up with the Word of God and how He wants us to think about things.***

***The power lies with us. We cannot blame anyone else, including God Himself, if we have chosen with our own free wills to constantly dwell on the negative and darker side of this life.***

Bottom line – we all have to learn how to develop right thinking in our thought process. Our part is to do the best we can to try and think and dwell on the things that God wants us to be concentrating and focusing on. However, as we all know, most of us only have a certain amount of mental and psychological strength in this area. Some will naturally go farther in this realm than others will.

This is where the Holy Spirit will really be coming in big time to help you get your thinking process straightened out and grounded in the Lord in the way that He will want it to be. This is all part of the sanctification process that God wants to start with each one of us.

As I said in my article titled, ["Sanctification,"](#) this process will not be accomplished overnight. If you have been operating in a negative type of mindset for a long period time, God will start to gradually and progressively move you out of it into a better, clearer, and healthier type of thinking.

Your job will be to work very closely with the Holy Spirit once He starts this sanctification process within you. You will see Him start to target specific areas in your thinking where you are really off base. Once this revelation has been given to you by the Holy Spirit, then it will be up to you as to whether or not you will choose to work with Him to get this particular area cleaned up to the degree that the Lord would really like.

If He tells you that you are too judgmental and too critical of others – then your part will be to do the best you can to try and cast down these types of negative and destructive thoughts and replace them with more positive and godly types of thoughts.

As our site continues to grow, we will be adding additional articles going deeper into this wrestling match that will occur between you and the Holy Spirit once He starts to move in on you to try and get some of your wrong

thinking straightened out. For many, this will be a very painful process because you will be forced to admit that you have some character flaws and imperfections that will need to be dealt with in your mind, soul, and personality.

***The Holy Spirit is the Master Surgeon – and He will be attempting to do inner spiritual surgery on you to take out what He does not want to be operating in your mind and thought process, and put in what He does want to be operating in it.***

Your job will be to choose, with your own free will, to work and cooperate with the Holy Spirit once He makes it very clear to you what specific changes He will want to make with you. He will not force these changes on you. He will let you know very clearly exactly what it is He wants to put in your system and exactly what it is He wants to take out.

If you choose to move and cooperate with the Holy Spirit on what specific changes He will want to make with you – then God the Father will allow the supernatural power of His Holy Spirit to truly begin to transform and sanctify you in the way and manner that will most pleasing to Him.

In the additional articles that will be listed in the Sanctification section of our site, I will be giving you some of the specific areas the Lord will want to target so He can begin the immediate work of trying to getting you cleaned up and sanctified to the degree that He would really like in this lifetime.

***And one of the main areas the Lord is definitely going to want to target is your private thinking and thought life – what you choose to think about on a daily basis. In other words, God wants to clean up and straighten out your thought life.***

***With all of the different types of material and sexual lusts that are operating in our world today that are competing for our time and attention, for many, this will initially be a very big battle.***

But if you are really wanting the Lord to help clean you up in some of these areas, especially in your private thought life, the Lord will only be too anxious to help get you over some of these mental hurdles through the incredible supernatural power of His Holy Spirit. This kind of inner transformation and sanctification can be accomplished in this life if you are willing to do your part by fully cooperating with the Lord once He starts it up with you.

Now I will give you some very good verses from the Bible all showing you that God the Father really does want to come after your thought life and attempt to put right and positive type thinking into your mind.

## 1. You Are What You Think

For those who like to scan read, I am going to go ahead and restate the above verse under this specific caption so you can have it once again at a quick glance as you scan down on these bolded captions.

***"For as he thinks in his heart, so is he." (Proverbs 23:7)***

This verse very clearly sets the stage that God the Father really wants to come after our thought life and get it properly cleaned up.

## 2. You Are Transformed By the Renewing of Your Mind

These next two verses will again show you that God is really wanting to come after your mind. And part of your mind is your thought process – what you choose to think about and dwell on. Both of these verses are using the words **"renewing"** and **"renewed"** in reference to your mind.

In other words, part of the transformation-sanctification process with the Lord involves getting your mind properly renewed through His Word and by His Spirit.

1. "I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. **And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind**, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God." (*Romans 12:1*)
2. "... that you put off, concerning your former conduct, the old man which grows corrupt according to the deceitful lusts, **and be renewed in the spirit of your mind**, and that you put on the new man which was created according to God, **in righteousness and true holiness.**" (*Ephesians 4: 22-24*)
3. "Therefore we do not lose heart. **Even though our outward man is perishing, yet the inward man is being renewed day by day.**" (*2 Corinthians 4:16*)

Notice Paul says in this last verse that our inner man is being renewed day by day. He is using the same word **"renewed"** as the above two

verses are using when they are talking about our minds being renewed. This means that God wants both our minds and our inner man to be renewed on a daily and progressive basis.

When God says that our inner spiritual transformation is done by getting our minds properly renewed in Him – He is giving all of us an incredible, powerful, spiritual secret. Again, this is all part of the sanctification process that the Lord wants to start with each and everyone of us.

### **3. We Now Have the Mind of Christ**

This next verse is making one of the most profound statements in all of Scripture. The first verse I will list below says that we now have the **"mind of Christ."** Think of the implications, ramifications, and power of this statement.

***As a result of having the Holy Spirit residing on the inside of us – we now have direct access to both God and Jesus who live in heaven. As a result of having this direct access to Jesus through the Holy Spirit – we now have His mind, or to put it another way, we can now have His mind operating through us.***

***Jesus, through the Holy Spirit, can now start to impart His thoughts and His ways of thinking direct into our minds. This transmission of His thoughts direct to us through the Holy Spirit is so clear, so perfect, and so powerful – that the Bible can now say that we have the "mind of Christ."***

So not only do we have the power of the Holy Spirit operating on the inside of us to help get our thought life cleaned up – but we now have the power of Jesus Christ Himself available to us since He will now allow us to have direct access into His own mind so that we can truly learn how we should act and think in this life.

***The second verse I will list below says that we are to now "imitate Christ." In other words, we are to act the way Jesus wants us to act.***

***Put these two verses together side by side like two pieces of a jigsaw puzzle – and Jesus is telling all of us loud and clear that He wants all of us to think like He thinks and act like He acts. He now becomes our perfect role model in which to pattern our inner life and our outer life after.***

Here are the two verses. They are both only one sentence long, but there is an incredible amount of powerful revelation being given to us in these two verses.

1. ***"But we have the mind of Christ." (1 Corinthians 2:16)***
2. ***"Imitate me, just as I also imitate Christ." (1 Corinthians 11:1)***

Again, being able to be tapped into the mind of Jesus Christ so that His thoughts and ways can be transmitted to us is all a part of the sanctification process that God can start with each and everyone one of us.

#### **4. God Has Given Us a Sound Mind**

This next verse is another major power verse, especially in the times we now live in. If you will notice, many nonbelievers, and even some carnal Christians, are not operating with very sound minds. All you have to do is spend five minutes with some people and you will be able to quickly tell who is operating with a sound mind and who is not.

The sexual and material lusts of this life have been so overwhelming for some of these people, that the only thing they have their minds constantly set on is trying to get as much sex, money, and power as they possibly can. As a result of these types of material and lustful pursuits, their thinking has become totally distorted, warped, debased, and downright unstable.

Many marriages and good friendships have been broken up as a result of these people's minds becoming very unsound as a result of the corruption and deterioration that will occur in a person's mind if they chase after these types of material and lustful pursuits for too long of a period of time.

I have personally seen some men in a 20 year period go from being very clear and sound thinking men to men who have become totally unstable and unsound in all of their ways. As a result of this deterioration in their minds, many of them have lost their marriages, and their good relationships they had with their children and some of their good close friends. Some of them had literally deteriorated down to the point where they had actually ended up committing suicide.

***One of the most incredible blessings that we can be given as a Christian, especially in the type of world we live in today, is the blessing of being able to have a good, clear, sound mind in the Lord! For those who are walking very close with the***

***Lord and have your act together with Him, the Holy Spirit will really move to impart this sound mind to you.***

In this next verse, God is telling us that not only can we get a sound mind from Him, but we can also get a mind that has a spirit of power and love in it. This verse actually starts out by telling us that we have not been given a spirit of fear, but a spirit that is of power, love, and sound mind.

Think about these 3 specific words – **power, love, and sound mind!** God is really trying to drive home a major point in the way that He has worded this specific Scripture verse. Here it is:

***"For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power and of love and of a sound mind." (2 Timothy 1:7)***

To those of you who are into memorizing certain Scripture verses, I would highly recommend that you add this one to your memorization list. With all of the crazy things that can hit us in this life, you really have to believe and ground on the promise of this verse.

***No matter how severe of a storm cloud you may be forced to deal with in this life – realize that you now have the mind of Jesus Christ and the power of the Holy Spirit operating through you to help keep your thinking "sound" and "powerful." This kind of mindset from the Lord is already in you. You just have to learn how to connect up to it, believe it, ground on it, and act on it.***

## **5. Your Thoughts Will Be Established by the Lord**

Since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, then this means He is the only One who has direct access into your thought life. Demons and other people cannot read your mind or your thoughts. This is your private area only. However, since God can perfectly read into your thought life – this leaves you with not being able to hide anything from Him.

Many people are very good at hiding everything from those close around them, but you can never fool God or hide anything from Him, as He is always one step ahead of you – even in your own personal and private thought life and what you choose to think about and dwell on.

I will list two verses under this caption. The first verse will tell us that the **"thoughts of the wicked are an abomination to the Lord."** This verse right here is telling us that God can literally read our thoughts since this verse is using the word **"thoughts."** I believe the word **"thoughts"** is referring to the thoughts in our minds, which are our unspoken words.

Also notice the Lord is using a very intense word when describing the thoughts of people who are considered really wicked and evil – and that word is **“abomination.”**

The BTK serial killer in the state of Kansas has just been caught. He has now pleaded guilty and just got done telling the court and the rest of the world the horrific details of all of his crimes. His evil and wicked thought life, which eventually led to his horrible crime spree, is a perfect example of what God would find to be a complete and utter abomination in His sight. And to think this man was part of a Christian Lutheran church!

***Bottom line – God does see and watch our thought life. This is why each Christian should do the best they can to try and clean it up.***

The second verse then gives us another very nice promise. It says that if we are willing to commit our works to the Lord – then our **“thoughts will be established.”**

If we are committing our works to the Lord, then we are operating in a full surrender with Him. And if we are operating in a full surrender with Him, then the Holy Spirit can really start to work with us in helping us to establish and solidify our thought life.

- 1. “The thoughts of the wicked are an abomination to the Lord, but the words of the pure are pleasant.” (Proverbs 15:26)**
- 2. “Commit your works to the Lord, and your thoughts will be established.” (Proverbs 16:3)**

I will now end this list of Scripture verses with one last verse showing us that God now wants us to have the responsibility of trying to control our thought life and what we choose to think about.

## **6. Bring Every Thought Into Captivity to the Obedience of Jesus**

This next verse is another powerful verse. This verse is telling us to bring every thought into captivity to the obedience of Jesus. What this means is that we are directly responsible for what we choose to think about and dwell on.

In the “Testimonies” section of our site, I have an article titled, “The Dangers of Hypnotism.”

In this testimony, a girl who I used to work with got herself into major trouble with the Lord when she went one time to see a hypnotist to try



and quit smoking. When she came out after just this one session, she literally lost 50% of her ability to remember and retain things. Both her short and long term memory abilities were severely affected.

When she first came to work for me and told me what had happened, I told her under no circumstances are we to ever blank our minds out to let a hypnotist gain control of what kinds of suggestions or thoughts he wants to plant into our minds – even if these are positive types of suggestions.

I then gave her the Scripture verse that I will list below. In this verse, it says that we are the ones to bring every thought into **“captivity”** to Jesus – not anyone else – including any hypnotist who wants to plant his suggestions into your mind.

She violated a major spiritual law that is in operation in reference to our thought life and the privacy that we have with the Lord on this issue. As a result of violating this major spiritual law, she drew a demon on her and this demon was then allowed to cause this short and long term memory loss with her.

Once I found out how all of this occurred, I was then able to give her the correct advice on how to get the demon off her and have her long and short term memory ability fully restored back to her.

***Bottom line – we decide what we want to think about in the privacy of our own thinking. We can either choose to think about good and godly things – or we can choose to think about bad and evil things. The choice is ours.***

***God makes it very clear in His Word as to what kinds of thoughts He would like us to be dwelling on. But not even God Himself will force His will on us in this realm of our being. We have to be the ones to make that choice.***

When God uses the word **“captivity”** in the following verse, I believe He is trying to tell us that we have to make some kind of concerted effort on our end to try and control our thought life and not let it get out of control – especially in the area of bad and fleshly type thoughts. We are to grab a hold of our thoughts and make sure that our thinking and our thoughts always line up with the way that He would like us to be thinking about things.

Here is the verse:

“For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, casting down arguments and every high thing

that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, **bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ ...**" (2 Corinthians 10:3)

With all of the material and sexual lusts of our world hitting us full force through the media and everything else we encounter on a daily basis, this is a real tall order for many of us to keep proper control of all the bad thoughts that can cross our minds.

But again, this is where the Holy Spirit can really help you out if you are willing to allow Him to enter you into this sanctification process with the Lord. Your job will be to do the best job you can in controlling your thought life. But where you will fail, and where you will have certain issues that will be harder to conquer using your own will power, is where the Holy Spirit will come in and supernaturally give you His help and strength in order to help get you over some of these harder hurdles.

## Conclusion

To those of you who would like to enter into a true sanctification process with the Lord – really expect the Lord to come after your mind in an attempt to properly renew it according to His Word, and attempt to put right thinking into your thought process.

Again, as with the other areas in this sanctification process, this will all be done on a very gradual and progressive basis. God will set the pace in which He will work with you in this realm. He will not overwhelm you. He will work you at a pace that He knows you will be comfortable with so He does not overwhelm you with too much at one time.

Your mind is the battlefield in the area of spiritual warfare. Demons will try and move in on you from time to time to try and get you to move into their dark ways of thinking and living in this life – and God will move in on you to try to get you to move and live in His ways of thinking and living in this life. The choice will always remain with you as to which side of the fence you will choose to live this life on.

***Realize that just because a demon or your own imagination has caused a bad thought to float across your mind does not mean that you have to dwell on it for any length of time. We all gets tons of quick flashing thoughts that will cross into our minds over the course of a day.***

***It's not the bad thought that may flash across your mind that will get you in trouble with the Lord – it is what you decide do with that bad thought once it crosses over into your mind. You can either choose to let that bad thought slide right out***

***of your mind and not give it another thought, or you can choose to really start thinking about it and dwelling on it.***

***And once you start to really think about and dwell on that bad thought – you will then start to feed it. And once you start to feed it – it will then start to grow. And once it starts to grow – it can then lead to a mental stronghold that you will then have a hard time in getting out of your thought process.***

***And once that mental stronghold starts to grow and get deeper and stronger in your thought process – you will then start to get an actual desire to want to act out on it. And once you start to act out on it, an actual addiction can start to form where you will then want to keep repeating the same behavior over and over again.***

***And then it is going to take the supernatural power of the Holy Spirit to help break you free from this addictive and compulsive behavior! And to think that all of this started with just one, simple, little thought crossing over into your mind, and you then caused it to grow by constantly thinking about it and dwelling on it.***

I believe this is how many addictions get started, especially those of the more aberrant type, such as the pedophiles we are constantly reading about in our local news stories across the nations.

No one is born a serial killer, rapist, or a pedophile. All of these types of abominable behaviors all had to start from something. And I believe that something may have been something they may have seen early on in their lives, something they may have experienced, or something that may have caused them to start thinking about it and dwelling on it.

In either event, they all had a chance very early on to nip it in the bud by choosing not to think about it – thereby causing it not to grow any further into their thought process.

***This is why the Scripture verse listed at the top of this article is so important for everyone to really grab a hold of and ground on in their walk with the Lord. Once again, this verse states that as a man thinks in his heart, so is he. In other words, you can become what you think!***

***Let God help put right thinking into your mind. Let God help and show you how to get your mind properly renewed through His Word and by His Spirit. If you are willing to let the Lord work with you on the renewing of your mind as part***

***of His sanctification process – then you can really start to progress into the true saint that He is calling you to become in Him in this life.***

# Death and Life Are in the Power of the Tongue

As part of your sanctification process with the Lord, expect God the Father to come after three main areas in your walk with Him.

The first area will be with your **"thought life"** – which is the area of your unspoken words. We already have another article in our site specifically dealing with this area. The title of this article is, "You are What You Think." In this article, I give you all of the Scripture verses that have to deal with the Lord wanting to impart a right type of thinking into your mind and thought process.

The second area God will be targeting will be your **"word life"** – which has to do with the words that are being released out of your mouth to other people.

The third area God will be coming after will be your **"action life"** – which will be how you act and behave towards others. Your actions and behaviors toward others has to always line with up with your sanctified thinking and your sanctified speech. The Bible says we have to be **"doers"** of the Word, not just hearers.

This article will be dealing with the second area, which will be your **"word life"** towards others. You can have a certain amount of your thinking and thought life cleaned up to some degree in the Lord with the sanctifying help of the Holy Spirit, but if you cannot make the next step and transmit the right kinds of words to others in your own personal dealings with them, then all of the sanctification that you went through to get your thinking and thought life cleaned up will have all been for naught.

In this article, I am going to give you several powerful verses from the Bible on this topic. When you string all of these verses together like I will do in this article, you will really be able to see exactly what God wants to do with you in this area. These verses are once again giving all of us some major profound revelation from the Lord in just this one area alone.

***Your "word life" with others will make or break you in your own personal relationships with other people in this life. If you do not learn how to speak to other people in a positive and godly manner, then sooner or later no one will want to have anything to do with you, and you will eventually find yourself being totally isolated and alone.***

***I simply cannot stress enough the power that is on these particular verses – and that each and every Christian do the best they can to clean up their speech and the way they express themselves to other people in this life.***

The very first verse I will list below will give us perfect revelation from the Lord on this issue. This one verse is so powerful from the Lord, that I have decided to name the title of this article just after this one verse.

This one verse is telling us that **“death and life are in the power of the tongue.”** Just stop and think for a minute what the Lord is trying to convey to us with these specific words. There are two things to pick up from this verse.

***The first thing that God is trying to tell all of us is that we have a certain amount of “power” in our tongues. Our tongue is referring to the verbal words that we speak out of our mouths to other people.***

***When God is using the word “power,” He is telling us that every single one of us has a certain amount of power residing in our mouth and in our tongues with the words that we can release to other people.***

***And with this kind of power residing in our ability to release spoken words to other people – God then tells us what can happen with this kind of power. This power can either be used to bring life or death to the person that we are speaking to. Think of the responsibility and ramifications of this revelation – that our spoken words to other people can either bring them life or bring them death!***

***You can either choose to learn how to speak and release positive words of [love](#), encouragement, and edification to other people in your own personal dealings with them, or you can choose to release negative words of condemnation, criticism, coldness, and harshness. The choice is yours!***

God the Father makes it very clear with the way that He has worded all of these Scripture verses which way He wants all of us to take with the power that we already have residing in our tongues.

Every single one of us can stop and think how good we have felt when someone has released and spoken words of love, encouragement, and edification to us. Words can cut right through you like a knife, and when those words are positive and constructive, they can have an incredible way of building up your own sense of self-esteem, self-worth, and self-confidence.

One of the verses I will list below says that good words can literally be health to our bones. In other words, good and positive types of words can give you better physical health as a result of the boost your immune system will receive.

However, just the reverse is also possible. If all a child ever hears from his parents as they are growing up are stern and abusive words of condemnation, criticism, and negativity – then that child's self-esteem and self-worth can be severely affected if it is not properly counter-balanced by other people in his life who will speak out the right kinds of words of love and encouragement to him.

If a child does not get properly watered with words of love and encouragement from his own flesh-and-blood parents during his early growing years in the family, then sooner or later he will end up believing in all of the lies of his parents as a result of their constant bombardments – and he will then end up growing up thinking that he will never be good enough to amount to anything worthwhile.

There are many grown adults who never end up accomplishing everything that God would've had in store for them in this life as result of not being able to pull out of all the negativity and pessimism that their parents had heaped on them during their earlier growing years in the family. And all of their possible growth in the Lord in this lifetime ends up getting stunted as a result of the **"death"** that was brought upon them by the negative and abusive words spoken to them by their own natural parents.

This is why the Lord is telling us in this verse that some kind of death can literally be brought about as a result of speaking out the wrong kinds of words to someone – especially words spoken between parents and their own children.

This same type of "death" can also occur in marriages between husbands and their wives. Many married women have had all of their healthy sense of self-respect, self-worth, and self-confidence beat right out of them as a result of all the verbal abuse they have had to put up with from their verbally abusive husbands.

***As Christians, we should all work very closely with the Holy Spirit in allowing Him to help us clean up our word life and how we verbally express ourselves to other people in this life.***

***If we can learn how to get this part of our life properly cleaned up and sanctified under His direction and guidance, then not only we will become more pleasing to the Lord, but we will also dramatically increase the quality of our own***

***personal relationships that we can have with other people in this life.***

For the Holy Spirit to really be able to start to work with you in this area, you will need the knowledge that the following Scripture verses will give you. I will once again break these verses down under their appropriate captions so you can fully grasp the revelation the Lord is trying to convey to you.

## **The Scripture Verses**

If you can grasp what the Lord is trying to tell you with the knowledge and revelation that is in these verses, and then start to work with the Holy Spirit in trying to learn how to change, control, and curb some of your bad speech habits – you can change the way you talk and express yourself to other people, with all of it being for the better.

I have personally seen the Lord take several people who used to cuss like sailors, and who were very demeaning and abusive in the way they would talk to other people, and completely change and transform them into sanctified saints who no longer cuss, and who now treat their spouses, their children, and their good personal friends in the godly way and manner that He would like all of us to do.

I will now break these individual verses down under 5 specific captions.

### **1. Death and Life Are in the Power of the Tongue**

The very first verse I will list below is the one that will tell us that death and life are in the power of the tongue. The rest of the verses will further extend off this revelation with some very interesting wording being used by the Lord to try and drive home the point of how powerful our words really are – and how they can either be used to bring life, love, edification, and encouragement into a person's life – or bring death, destruction, negativity, and torment.

I will list each one of the verses one right after the other, and then point out and highlight some of the key phrases that are in some of these verses so you can really see the powerful revelation that is in these verses.

1. "Death and life are in the power of the tongue, and those who love it will eat its fruit." (**Proverbs 18:21**)
2. "There is one who speaks like the piercings of a sword, but the tongue of the wise promotes health. The truthful lip shall be established forever, but a lying tongue is but for a moment."



**(Proverbs 12:18)**

3. "Keep your tongue from evil, and your lips from speaking guile. Depart from evil, and do good; seek peace, and pursue it." (**Psalm 34:13**)
4. "A man's stomach shall be satisfied from the fruit of his mouth, and from the produce of his lips he shall be filled." (**Proverbs 18:20**)
5. "The Lord God has given me the tongue of the learned, that I should know how to speak a word in season to him who is weary." (**Isaiah 50:4**)
6. "Walk in wisdom toward those who are outside, redeeming the time. Let your speech always be with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how you ought to answer each one." (**Colossians 4:5**)
7. "The mouth of the righteous is a well of life, but violence covers the mouth of the wicked." (**Proverbs 10:11**)
8. "The words of a man's mouth are deep waters; the wellspring of wisdom is a flowing brook." (**Proverbs 18:4**)
9. "A wholesome tongue is a tree of life, but perverseness in it breaks the spirit." (**Proverbs 15:4**)
10. "Pleasant words are like a honeycomb, sweetness to the soul and health to the bones." (**Proverbs 16:24**)
11. "Anxiety in the heart of man causes depression, but a good word makes it glad." (**Proverbs 12:25**)
12. "A soft answer turns away wrath, but a harsh word stirs up **anger**. The tongue of the wise uses knowledge rightly, but the mouth of fools pours forth foolishness." (**Proverbs 15:1**)
13. "He who guards his mouth preserves his life, but he who opens wide his lips shall have destruction." (**Proverbs 13:3**)
14. "Whoever guards his mouth and tongue keeps his soul from troubles." (**Proverbs 21:23**)
15. "The heart of the righteous studies how to answer, but the mouth of the wicked pours forth evil." (**Proverbs 15:28**)

16. "Set a guard, O Lord, over my mouth; keep watch over the door of my lips." (***Psalm 141:3***)

If you will notice, some of these verses have two sides to them. On the one side are the positive benefits and blessings one can receive as the result of learning how to speak properly to others. On the other side are the negative things that can occur as a result of not properly expressing yourself to others – either in the specific words that you choose to say to a person, or in the way or manner in which you say these words to a person.

So you can fully grasp both sides of this coin, I will first bullet point all of the positive things that are in the above verses, and then I will bullet point all of the negative things. Here is the positive side of the coin:

- **The tongue of the wise promotes health**
- **The truthful lip shall be established forever**
- **A man's stomach shall be satisfied from the fruit of his mouth**
- **Let your speech always be with grace and seasoned with salt**
- **The mouth of the righteous is a well of life**
- **The wellspring of wisdom is a flowing brook**
- **A wholesome tongue is a tree of life**
- **Pleasant words are sweetness to the soul and health to the bones**
- **A good word can make someone's heart glad**
- **A soft answer turns away wrath**
- **The tongue of the wise uses knowledge rightly**
- **He who guards his mouth preserves his life**
- **He who guards his mouth and tongue keeps his soul from trouble**

When you read all of these key phrases one right after the other, you can really start to see how powerful of a thing it really is if you can learn how to properly express yourself to other people in this life. Notice in 3 of the middle bullet points, that someone who can speak to others in a righteous and godly manner will be like a well of life, a flowing brook, and a tree of life to that person.

Pleasant words, good and uplifting type words, and a wholesome tongue can also help serve to lift a person's spirit up, help make their hearts glad and happy, be able to turn away possible wrath and anger, and also help to guard and preserve your own personal life. One wrong word to the wrong person at the wrong time could lead you to having an early departure from this life.

If more people would learn how to walk and abide in the revelation and knowledge that is in these verses, and learn how to express themselves in

a more positive and godly manner to others – we would have less tensions and conflicts in our marriages, in our families, in our personal friendships, and in the workplace.

Now here is the negative side of this same coin:

- **Keep your tongue from evil and speaking guile**
- **Violence will cover the mouth of the wicked**
- **A perverse tongue will break the spirit**
- **A harsh word stirs up anger**
- **He who opens wide his lips shall have destruction**
- **The mouth of the wicked pours forth evil**

Jesus has already told us that those who will live by the sword will also die by the sword. The second bullet point above tells us that violence can chase after and literally come upon someone if their speech to others is wicked and evil.

These key phrases are telling us that those with big mouths, and those who like to speak harsh words to others can bring sudden destruction down on them and possibly those who may be close to them. Flip off and cuss out the wrong guy on the highway, and he may be the last person you will ever see alive again.

Put both sides of this coin right next to one another, and you can see very clearly how the Lord wants us to express ourselves to other people in this life.

## 2. Rebuking the Wicked

Though the Lord wants us to be able to talk to others in a civil, loving, and uplifting way and manner – this does not mean we have to become submissive doormats and be too afraid to engage with the wicked and evil people in this life if we have to.

Jesus Himself did not mince any words when attacking some of the high ranking Jewish leaders of His day. He also did not hold back when throwing out the money changers who were trying to do business in His house of worship.

The next set of verses are very interesting, especially in the day and age we now live in where everyone is trying to be politically correct and are too afraid to verbally engage with someone for fear of offending them.

Here are 5 very good verses telling us not to be afraid to engage when we have to, and be willing to take a stand and tell the truth even if it means initially hurting or offending someone.

1. **"But those who rebuke the wicked will have delight, and a good blessing will come upon them. He who gives a right answer kisses the lips." (Proverbs 24:25)**
2. **"Open rebuke is better than love carefully concealed. Faithful are the wounds of a friend, but the kisses of an enemy are deceitful." (Proverbs 27:5)**
3. **"He who rebukes a man will find more favor afterward than he who flatters with the tongue." (Proverbs 28:23)**
4. **"Blows that hurt cleanse away evil, as do stripes the inner depths of the heart." (Proverbs 20:30)**
5. **"Therefore, putting away lying, each one speak truth with his neighbor, for we are members of one another ... let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but what is good for necessary edification, that it may impart grace to the hearers." (Ephesians 4:25,29)**

As I have stated in my article on "The Sin of Abortion," many pastors across this country are afraid to call out this abomination for the sin that it really is for fear of offending those who may be pro-choice in their congregations. As all of the above verses are trying to tell you, anyone who is too afraid to call out these types of obvious sins are failing to make an attempt to clean away an evil sin and abomination.

Notice that several of these verses are telling you that if you would be willing to take a strong stand and express the Lord's opinion on these kinds of hot issues and topics, that you initially may hurt and offend a few people, but afterwards you will end up finding much more favor with others, will help impart grace and knowledge to these people, and then possibly end up receiving a good blessing from the Lord for being willing to do this.

This same principle also applies between parents and their children. Nip in the bud any bad and inappropriate behavior as soon as you start to see it surface and manifest, and you just may save your son or daughter years of possible trouble down the road.

### **3. Do Not Bear False Witness Against Your Neighbor**

In the very litigious claims conscious society we now live in, many people are filing unscrupulous lawsuits. And in some of these lawsuits, the plaintiffs are bearing some type of false witness against either an employer, a co-worker, a company or corporation, or a total stranger. In

other words, they are flat out lying against a defendant, all in an effort to try and make some type of financial gain either against an individual or a particular company.

As you will see in the verses I will list below, when God the Father has it set up as one of His 10 commandments that you should not be bearing any type of false witness against your neighbor, and then tops it off by saying that this type of lying will be considered an abomination in His sight – any Christian will get himself into major trouble with the Lord if they try and do this to either unjustly hurt the person they have targeted as a matter of trying to get some type of personal revenge against them, or if they are doing it to try and make some kind of financial gain.

You will have the vengeance and wrath of God Almighty Himself come down on you and your life if you ever try to hurt anyone else with any type of false accusation or false charge. Let these verses be a major warning to any Christian who is thinking about doing this for either personal revenge or any type of monetary gain.

1. **“Do not be a witness against your neighbor without cause, for would you deceive with your lips? Do not say, “I will do to him just as he has done to me; I will render to the man according to his work.” (Proverbs 24:28)**
2. **“A false witness will not go unpunished, and he who speaks lies will not escape.” (Proverbs 19:5)**
3. **“Do not speak evil of one another, brethren.” (James 4:11)**
4. **“Lying lips are an abomination to the Lord, but those who deal truthfully are His delight.” (Proverbs 12:22)**
5. **“Getting treasures by a lying tongue is the fleeting fantasy of those who seek death.” (Proverbs 21:6)**

Notice the second verse says that anyone who bears false witness will not go unpunished. The first verse tells us that we cannot even try to bear false witness against someone even as a matter of personal revenge. The Bible tells us that any type of vengeance or payback in this life always belongs to the Lord. It does not belong to you, or to any of your friends who would like to try and get even for you.

The last verse perfectly describes what people are doing when filing unjust lawsuits based upon trumped-up, false allegations. Trying to obtain treasures and financial wealth by way of a lying tongue is a fleeting fantasy, and eventually judgment will be rendered against them at the hands of God Himself.

As a Christian, do not ever tempt your hand or your fate with the Lord by crossing over into this kind of forbidden territory with Him.

#### 4. Shun Profane and Vain Babblings

In addition to never, ever, considering bearing any type of false witness against anyone, these next set of verses will tell us to learn how to shun profane and vain babblings.

The word **"babblings"** means **"foolishness and meaningless type of talk."** In other words, try to keep unnecessary and foolish type of gossiping and talk to a bare minimum. I know in the work place where many people are huddled very close together, this is a real hard one to try and keep on top of.

But as you will see in several of the verses listed below, if the one you are gossiping and talking about eventually finds out that you have been doing this behind their back, you will lose a good friend if that person was your friend to begin with, or you will end up making an enemy if that person was not a close friend.

One verse below says that **"a brother offended is harder to win than a strong city."** Two other verses say that **"a whisperer"** and one who **"repeats a matter"** will **"separate the best of friends."**

Many people have lost some of their best friends as a result of getting caught talking behind their backs and spreading personal information about them. Once that personal trust has been violated to any significant degree in a good friendship, it will be very hard to get them to ever be able to trust you again.

These next 6 verses are a true word to the wise.

1. **"But shun profane and vain babblings, for they will increase to more ungodliness. And their message will spread like cancer." (2 Timothy 2:16)**
2. **"In all labor there is profit, but idle chatter leads only to poverty." (Proverbs 14:23)**
3. **"A talebearer reveals secrets, but he who is of a faithful spirit conceals a matter." (Proverbs 11:13)**
4. **"A brother offended is harder to win than a strong city ..." (Proverbs 18:19)**

**5. "A perverse man sows strife, and a whisperer separates the best of friends." (*Proverbs 16:28*)**

**6. "... but he who repeats a matter separates the best of friends." (*Proverbs 17:9*)**

Per the article that we have titled "Choose Your Friends Carefully," if you have been given several good God-friends by the Lord, really value and cherish these kinds of personal relationships and do not ever be tempted to betray their trust by engaging in unnecessary babblings and gossiping behind their back. True good God-friends are hard to find in this life.

I also believe that cussing, cursing, and swearing can also be included in what the Bible calls "**profane babblings.**" There are many Christians who still like to cuss out of their flesh, even as they continue to grow in the Lord.

However, sooner or later what you will find out as you start to draw closer to the Lord in your own personal relationship with Him, is that your desire to want to keep on cussing will start to wane. Not only will you be receiving the conviction of the Holy Spirit Himself when you do start to cuss, but you will also find your own natural desire to want to keep on cussing will start to wane and lessen.

The reason for this is because you will find yourself wanting to become more pleasing to the Lord in your actions, thoughts, and spoken words. Your desire to want to please God will increase and once it does, you will start to lose all desire to want to cuss anymore because you will sense how displeasing it is to Him and that He really does find it offensive.

If you really stop and examine all of the cuss and curse words we use, most of them are either attacks directly against God, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit, or they have to do with some type of nasty bodily function. Many people cuss out of habit and they never really stop and think of the actual words they are using when they are cussing.

Just remember, God the Father is watching your every movement, your every thought, and your every action. He sees and hears every thought and every word that comes out of your mouth. If we really love our one and only Savior, then we will lose all desire to want to cuss, curse, or swear in His sight. It's not only offensive to Him, but it's also offensive to anyone else who may be around you when you start spouting off.

## **5. God Will Judge You By Your Words**

I will end these Scripture verses with one very strong and powerful verse direct from Jesus Himself. In this verse, Jesus tells us that we will have to

give a direct account to Him for **“every idle word”** that we may speak in this life. He says that we will either be **“justified”** by the good words we have spoken in our lives, or be **“condemned”** by any of the bad words we may have spoken.

In other words, not only does God the Father want us to get our speech in order in how we relate to other people, but He is also going to be holding every single one of us personally accountable with how we have spoken and expressed ourselves to other people in this life.

***This is a very serious warning being given to us by our Lord – and how we talk and express ourselves to other people in this life should never, ever be taken for granted.***

***As the first verse has told us, God has given each and everyone of us a certain amount of power with the words that we can speak out to other people – and those words can either bring life or death to the person we are speaking to.***

Here is this most solemn verse:

***“But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment. For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned.” (Matthew 12:36)***

Not only will the kinds of words you speak out to others in this life determine how many good friends you may end up making or how good those personal friendships will end up being, but your own words are also going to be appropriately judged by the Lord Himself on your day of judgment with Him.

## Conclusion

The Golden Rule will really apply to this part of our walk with the Lord. The Golden Rule says that we should treat others like we would want them to treat us. If you apply this rule to this particular topic, you could then say that we should **“speak to others in the way that we would want them to speak to us.”**

As I said at the top of this article, every single one of us can flashback and recall all of the times that good words spoken to us in a positive, loving, and edifying manner have made us feel really good, and have helped us to build up our own levels of self-esteem and self-confidence. However, we can also recall all of the times that words spoken to us in a hateful, condescending, and critical manner have made us feel as low as we could possibly go.



When those kinds of negative words start cutting right through you like a knife, they can penetrate deep into the heart and soul and cause major damage to the emotions and psyche of a person – especially if that person is not old or mature enough to be able to consider the negative source from where they are coming from – and then realize that his own self-worth as a person is not based upon what other people may think about him, but only what God thinks about him.

***With the way the Lord has worded all of the above verses, you can really tell that this is one area that He wants every single one of us to get a good and solid grip on.***

***There is simply no excuse for anyone to be talking to other people in a demeaning, critical, and condescending way. If we are all equal in the eyes of God, then we should all be looking at everyone else in this life as an equal – not as someone who may be better or lesser than us.***

If you really study the specific wording in all of the above verses, you will have more than enough knowledge and revelation from the Lord on how to clean up your speech, and how to properly express yourself to other people in this life.

This is one area where the Holy Spirit will move in on very strongly in order to give you a helping hand. You will literally sense, and sometimes actually feel Him guiding some of your words and how you should be expressing yourself to other people, depending on the nature and the intensity of the conversation that is taking place.

Just learn to be sensitive to His leadings and guidance as to what to say and how to say it. You can learn how to flow with Holy Spirit in this area if you really have the desire to want to improve yourself in this area.

***Remember – God the Father has given you a very powerful gift with the power that He has allowed you to have residing in your own tongue. You have the power of life and death in your tongue. Use that power wisely. Use that power to bring life, love, encouragement, and edification into other people's lives.***

***If you do, then not only will God be highly rewarding you once you enter into heaven, but you will also be receiving golden treasures down here on this earth – which will be all the good personal relationships you will be able to make and establish with the other people in your life – and all of those good personal relationships will then be permanent and eternal treasures that you will be able to carry over with you into the next life.***

Nothing will draw people to you quicker and easier than you being able to talk and express yourself to other people in the exact same way that Jesus would do if He was still walking down here on this earth. Let Jesus be your perfect role model. Study how Jesus expressed Himself when He was walking down here on this earth. Learn to pattern your own speech after the way He talked and expressed Himself to other people.

God's ultimate and highest aim for every single one of us is to transform, shape, and mold us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ – and part of this sanctification process will be the Holy Spirit coming after our word and speech life.

Let the Holy Spirit dig and get into your word life with how you talk and express yourself to other people – and I guarantee you that He will make some astounding changes in this area if you are willing to work with Him in the specific areas that He will want to target for improvement.

## In the World – But Not of the World

Many of you have heard from your pastors the title of this article in that we are to be in the world, but not of the world in our walk with the Lord. Not only is this a very catchy phrase and saying, but this is also a rock, solid, God-truth that is coming straight out of our Bible.

Many Christians get a bit confused when they first hear this phrase and revelation. The first question they usually have is if God is calling me to do something worthwhile and noble in my call and purpose for Him down here on this earth, then why is God telling me not to become a part **“of”** this world? How can I complete my divine call in the Lord if I do not get actively involved in the world and with other people in general?

Jesus Himself went full scale into His surroundings once He received the [Baptism of the Holy Spirit](#) and then came out of the 40 day wilderness test with the devil. From there, He embarked on a major three and a half year miracle ministry before He went to the cross to die for all of us and our sins.

During those three and half years, Jesus was constantly preaching, teaching, healing and delivering people. At first glance, it looked and appeared as if He had become an actual part of the world with how much interaction that was going on between Him and everyone else that was around Him. But as you will see in the explanations below, God the Father does want us to become actively involved **“in”** the world so that we can fully accomplish all of His perfect will for our lives.

Another problem that some Christians have with this phrase is they misinterpret what God is trying to tell them when He is making the statement that we are not to be **“of”** the world. They think they should be retreating from life and everyone in general, and some of them end up becoming monks, hermits, and recluses, hiding away from as much of the world as they possibly can.

I know God may call a very small percentage of His people into that type of special celibate and monastic type lifestyle, but for the most part, I believe God wants His people to become very active **“in”** the world so they can make it a much better place to live, work, and play in. How can you witness, save, teach, and help deliver other people if you are not **“in”** the world trying to reach and connect with them in the first place?

I believe this particular revelation from the Lord has two sides to it. It is like looking at a two sided coin.

On the one side of the coin we are to be **"in"** the world. As you will see in one of the Scripture verses below, Jesus is telling His Father not to take us out of the world, since we all have a great commission and call from Him to try and save and help as many people as we possibly can.

We cannot **"reach"** the lost, the downtrodden, the helpless, the poor, the sinners, and the people who are being held in some type of captivity if we are not **"in"** the world trying to reach them with the message and gospel of our Lord and Savior.

This is what is meant by the Lord when He tells us that we still have to continue to be living **"in"** this world. We all have to be born into this world as a result of the curse of Adam and Eve, and until it is our time to leave and depart from this life, God will expect each and everyone of us to come and work for Him.

Once you enter into a full surrender with the Lord, He will then place you into His perfect will for your life. And once God places you into His perfect will for your life, then He will lead you into the divine plan and destiny that He has set up for your life. And in that divine destiny will be your call, your missions, your divine assignments, and the specific people that He will want you to work with.

***Again, you cannot properly compete your call and all of your divine assignments for the Lord if you are not willing to get actively involved "in" the world to some degree and to some extent. This is the one side of the coin where we are supposed to be "in" the world.***

However, this revelation from the Lord also has a flip side to it. There is a flip side to this same coin. Though we are to be actively involved **"in"** the world to the degree that God will lead us to, we also have to realize and be very aware that we are not to become too much of an actual part **"of"** the world.

As you will see in one of the verses below, God is telling us to keep ourselves **"unspotted"** from the world. In other words, He does not want us to become spotted, contaminated, and tainted by the bad and evil things of this world. And the only way that we can keep ourselves from becoming too spotted and contaminated from this world is not to get too deep and friendly with the ways of this world.

***In other words, God is asking all of us to walk a very fine line between being actively and properly involved "in" the world so we can reach and help other people – but at the same time making sure that we do not fall too deep and too far into the world where we then start to fall into the actual evil, depravity, and corruptness of this world.***

The best analogy I can give you on this so that you can fully understand what the Lord is trying to convey to us in this revelation is the **“fence analogy.”**

Imagine a fence line running alongside your right side as you continue to walk on the straight and narrow path that God has you set up to walk on. The phrase and saying that will come off this fence line analogy that perfectly lines up with what the Lord is trying to tell us in this revelation is that we all should be **“staying on our side of the fence.”**

On your side of the fence is the divine path that you are taking for the Lord, along with all of His righteous ways on how we are to act and behave in this life with ourselves and with other people in general.

On the other side of the fence are the paths taken by those who are either not saved, or the ones who are considered to be very carnal and fleshly type Christians, whose only goals and desires in this life is to get as much out of this life while they still can. Their only goals and ambitions in this life is to try and gain as much of the material and lustful things out of this life as they possibly can before their day in the sun is finally over.

We thus live in a dual type of world. On the one side of the fence is the side of God and the righteous way that He wants us to live this life. On the other side of the fence are the unsaved sinners and carnal Christians who are not living their life God’s way, and they are out breaking any law and commandment they see fit so they can satisfy their cravings for the lustful pursuits of this life.

Once you become saved and born again by accepting Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Savior, you are now in whole different ballgame. You are now on a whole different type of playing field. God the Father perfectly lays it out for each and everyone of us in the way that He has worded the following verse I will now give you.

In this verse, God is giving every single one of us a big choice to make in this life. We can either choose to follow God and His ways for living in this life and **“live”** – or we can choose to follow the wicked and evil ways of this world and **“die.”** Here is one whopper, all-or-nothing, black and white, straight-to-the-point verse direct from the mouth of the Lord Himself:

***“... I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing; therefore choose life, that both you and your descendants may live; that you may love the Lord your God, that you may obey His voice, and that you may cling to Him, for He is your life and the length of your days ...”***  
***(Deuteronomy 30:19)***

Notice God says absolutely nothing about any type of middle or neutral grounds with this proclamation. Either we choose to follow God and live this life the way that He wants us to live it – or we can choose to follow the ways of this world and eventually bring down death and cursing upon us and possibly those who may be close to us.

Notice in this verse that God is telling us that we must **“obey His voice,”** which means that we have to follow directly after Him and all of His ways for us in this life, not after the ways of this world or anyone else in this world.

## The Scripture Verses

Now here are 5 very good verses from the Bible that are giving us this specific revelation in that we are to be in the world, but not of the world.

I will first list each one of the verses one right after the other, and then I will point out and highlight several key words and phrases in these verses.

1. “If you were of the world, the world would love its own. **Yet because you are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world,** therefore the world hates you.” (*John 15:19*)
2. “I have given them Your word; and the world has hated them **because they are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.** I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one. **They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world.**” (*John 17:14*)
3. “Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, **and to keep oneself unspotted from the world.**” (*James 1:27*)
4. “**Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him.** For all that is in the world – the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the *pride* of life – is not of the Father but is of the world. And the world is passing away, and the lust of it; but he who does the *will of God* abides forever.” (*1 John 2:15*)
5. “Adulterers and adulteresses! Do you not know that **friendship** with the world is enmity with God? Whoever therefore wants to be a friend of the world makes himself an enemy of God.” (*James 4:4*)

Notice in the first two verses that Jesus is specifically telling us that we are not to be **“of the world.”** He then goes one step further in the third verse from James when He tells us that He wants us to remain **“unspotted”** from the world.

Jesus then perfectly wraps it up in the last two verses when He tells us that if we ever get to the point where we have become too friendly with the world and the ways of it, then we will literally become the enemy of God Almighty Himself!

When Jesus Himself is telling us that we will become His Father’s enemy if we become too friendly and too attached to the ways and material things of this world – you know we are dealing with a very serious warning from the Lord on this issue!

Jesus points out to us that all of the lustful pursuits and things of this life will eventually pass way when we die and cross over. In another verse, Jesus has already told us that what good will it do a man to gain all the wealth of this world as his possessions, but then lose his own soul in the pursuit and acquirement of all of that wealth. It will all have ended up being for naught when everything is all finally said and done.

## Conclusion

Though most of us know exactly what the Lord is trying to tell us with the revelation and knowledge that is in these verses, for many Christians in this day and age, this one is a real hard one to try and keep on top of.

With the incredible advances in technology and knowledge in the last 100 years, much of the world has become a much better place to live, work, and play in. As a result of all of this incredible advancement in technology and knowledge, we now have many more toys and material possessions that we can all strive to acquire more of. We can now shoot for bigger and better houses, bigger and better cars, and bigger and better material things for our lives in general.

With all of these types of material blessings from our Lord, it becomes very easy for many to get out of balance with all of it. Instead of realizing where all of this abundant type of wealth is really coming from in the first place, and choosing to stay humble and accountable with it in their walks with the Lord, many Christians start to get too caught up in the actual pursuit and desire for this material wealth.

Before they know it, they have placed their pursuit and desire for all of this material wealth before God Himself. They are no longer wanting to serve and follow God. They now only want to serve themselves and what they can still get out of this life.

***As Christians, we always have to stay on top of this part of our walk with the Lord. Jesus Himself has made it as clear and as plain as day as to how we are to look at this life and interact with it. We are to stay "in" the world. We have a holy mission and calling direct from the Lord Himself on what it is He wants us to accomplish and get done for Him before we depart to be with Him for all of eternity.***

***The goal of each Christian's life should be to accomplish, to the best of their abilities, God the Father's perfect will for their lives. Our goal should be to serve God and do what He wants us to do in this life – not to chase after the world and all the material wealth and possessions of this world, which will do nothing but rot and perish the minute we leave and depart from this life.***

***We have to keep all of our priorities straight, and our number one priority should be to want to serve God and accomplish His perfect will for our lives. If we make that our number one goal and aspiration in this life, then God will appropriately reward each one of us once we enter into heaven. And those heavenly rewards will far surpass and exceed any of the material wealth and possessions that we could have gained down here on this earth.***

As Christians, we have to realize that we no longer even belong to ourselves, much less to the world in general. We have been bought back at a severe price at the death of our Lord and Savior, and we now belong to God, and God alone. We now work for God, and God alone.

**What this means is that our very protective and loving Father has now drawn a major battle line in the sand for all of us. He is letting all of us know, loud and clear, what we can and cannot do in this life. He is letting all of us know where we can tread in this life and where we cannot tread.**

**Boundary lines and a fence line have now been put up by our Lord. God is now telling all of us to stay on our side of the fence in our walk with Him. We have to stay on the righteous side of the fence in our walk with Him.**

Though there is much in this life that will be very enticing and tempting to want to cross over and experiment with, realize that there are going to be certain things of the flesh that you will not be able to chase after in this life.



You cannot be doing drugs, abusing alcohol, and sleeping with whoever you want outside the bounds of holy marriage. You cannot be cheating and scamming others in an effort to try and gain more wealth and riches.

***You now have to play everything by the Book – and that Book is the Bible!***

Many of our teenagers are battling this cold hard reality in the high schools and colleges they are attending. God obviously wants them to be “in” this world, as they will need a proper education to progress into the calls and divine assignments that He will have in store for them in this life. But this does not mean you have to cross over into the carnal and fleshly worlds of those who are not walking right with the Lord.

You can sit next to someone in school who may be doing drugs and living a wide and carnal type of life. You can befriend him. You can witness to him as the Spirit leads. You can help him with his schoolwork if he should ask you. But this does not mean you have to leave your side of the fence and cross over into his world of drugs, alcohol, and wild sex parties. You can keep yourself unspotted from the world and yet still be “in” the world to help other people out.

The same thing goes for adults who are working in environments where they have a mixture of good apples and bad apples. Again, you can help out, and work in harmony and unity with those who are living their life on the dark and wild side of this life. But this does not mean you have to cross over and leave your side of the fence to start going to their drug, alcohol, and wild sex parties outside of work.

**Many Christians have been seduced into crossing over into some of these carnal and fleshly realms as a result of the seductive and persuasive influence of some of their co-workers or schoolmates.**

**This is why this particular piece of revelation is so important for each and every Christian to not only have the knowledge of, but to also abide by it and not be tempted to ever cross over into some of these forbidden areas with the Lord.**

These boundary lines are being set up by the Lord for our own good and for our protection. Every Christian father and mother should be burning this piece of revelation into their young children’s minds at an early age so they can have all of this knowledge to fall back on when they start to get tempted to cross over into this darker side of life. This knowledge should be fully ingrained in them by the time they move into their high schools, colleges, and then eventually into the work place.

This particular piece of revelation may be the difference as to whether or not some of your children ever become everything that God is calling them to become in this life. Every minute of every day someone is getting hurt, maimed, or murdered as a result of crossing over into the darker side of this life and hanging out with the wrong kind of people.

***Bottom line – you are still “in” the world as far as God the Father is concerned because He has a specific plan and purpose for your life – but you are no longer part “of” this same world. You now belong to the Lord, and you now have to live your life the way He will want you to live it, not the way you or the rest of the world would like you to live it.***

***This choice will always be yours to make. You can either choose to follow God and His ways for your life and stay on His side of the fence in your walk with Him – or you can choose to leave the safety and protection of His side and venture into the darker side of this life where death, cursing, and major misfortune will await you.***

Once again, God the Father could not make things any more clear and plain with the revelation that He is giving us in that we are to be in the world, but not of the world.

Remember, stay on your side of the fence in your walk with the Lord. Many great men and women of God have lost their calls and divine destinies in the Lord because they violated this basic fundamental revelation from the Lord.

## God is No Respector of Persons

Part of the sanctification process that God the Father would like to start with each and everyone of us is to make sure that our minds get properly renewed according the knowledge and revelation that is in His Word. In other words, we have to learn how to develop right thinking in our minds and in our thought process.

In order to get our minds properly renewed where we can start thinking right about things, the Holy Spirit will be moving very strongly to **put in** what He does want you to be thinking right about, and **taking out** what He does not want you to be thinking about.

***One of the very first areas that you will really need to get a grip on in this area is to learn that God the Father is no respector of persons. What this means is that every single man and woman He has ever created is on an equal footing with Him. What this means is that He has an equal and unconditional love for each person He has ever created and He is not going to be playing favorites with anyone.***

As you will see in the Scripture verses I will list below, they are all telling us that God the Father is no respector of persons and that He will not be showing any type of partiality or favoritism to anyone.

***What this means is that God will work with each person who will properly come to Him with the same amount of intensity and to the same degree that He will work with anyone else. In other words, there will be equal treatment for everyone!***

***This means we will all have an equal chance to be able enter into God's perfect plan and destiny for our lives – and then allow Him to build that life up and take it into the specific directions that He will want to take it in.***

Part of the problem in this area is that the Body of Christ is divided into one of two main camps. In the one camp is the Christian who has fully surrendered his entire life over to the Lord and is willing to enter into God's perfect plan and destiny for his life.

As a result of making this kind of full surrender to the Lord, God is now working and building up this person's life to its maximum capabilities and possibilities in this life. This fully surrendered Christian has a very active and powerful walk with the Lord as a result of being willing to come into this full surrender with the Him.

And then you have the second camp, which is where I believe most Christians are living in today – and that is out of the perfect will of God for their lives. In other words, they have never made that full surrender with the Lord where He would be the One to fully guide and direct their lives into the specific directions that He would want it to go in.

As a result of this extreme contrast between these two camps, you have Christians who are walking in this second camp, which is out of the perfect will of God for their lives, wondering why the fully surrendered Christian is getting all of the good activity and blessings in their lives and they are not getting anywhere in their lives with the Lord.

The fully surrendered Christians have meaning and purpose in their lives. They know where they are going with the Lord and they now have God's anointing, blessing, and favor operating in their lives so they can make it to the tops of the mountains God is asking them to climb for Him. And all of this positive activity is being brought into their lives as a result of being willing to fully surrender their entire lives over to God the Father for His direction and handling.

The Christians who are living and walking in the second camp are calling all of their own shots and running all of their own shows, and many of them are getting absolutely nowhere in this life as a result of trying to do all of this on their own.

In the Bible basics section of our site, we have another article titled, "The Full Surrender." In this article, I give you all of the main verses from the Bible that is telling us that there is only one way for each and every Christian to live this life – and that is operating under a full and complete surrender with the Lord, where He will now be the One to guide and lead your life in the direction that He will want it to go in.

As a result of this kind of divide in the Body of Christ, you have many Christians who are in this second camp being very jealous and envious of all of the good works and fruit that the fully surrendered Christian is producing for the Lord. But instead of trying to see the truth as to why these fully surrendered Christians are getting this kind of blessed activity with the Lord in the first place, they start getting mad at God and start accusing Him of playing favorites with a certain amount of His people, much like what siblings will do with their own natural parents if they think one of the other siblings is getting preferential treatment from one or both of the parents.

The Bible says that the truth will set you free, but you first have to be willing to see what that truth is and then fully understand it before it can start to work to set you free.

If you are not willing to see that fully surrendered Christians are receiving this kind of blessed and meaningful life from the Lord all as a result of making this full surrender with Him – then you will continue to stay stuck and grounded right where you are at, and you will continue to throw pity parties and blame everyone else for your miserable and unproductive life, including God Himself.

***Bottom line – because the Bible tells us so – God the Father is no respecter of persons, and He will not be showing any type of partiality or favoritism to any man or any woman He has ever created.***

***What this means is that you will have no excuse on your day of judgment with the Lord as to why you did not have a more blessed, active, productive, and fruitful life for Him while living down here on this earth.***

***You will have nobody to blame but yourself if you have chosen with your own free will to run your own life and call all of your own shots rather than turning your entire life over to God the Father for His direction and handling.***

Now here are 4 very powerful and profound verses from the Bible that is giving us this powerful revelation from the Lord. The first verse is from the Original King James Version. This will be the verse that will give you the specific wording that God the Father is no respecter of persons. The other three verses are from the New King James Version.

1. "Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, of a truth I perceive that **God is no respecter of persons:** But in every nation he that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him." (*Acts 10:34*)
2. "... **God shows no personal favoritism to no man ....**" (*Galatians 2:6*)
3. "For the Lord your God is God of gods and Lord of lords, the great God, mighty and awesome, **who shows no partiality nor takes a bribe.**" (*Deuteronomy 10:17*)
4. "And if you call on the Father, **who without partiality judges according to each one's work ...** " (*1 Peter 1:17*)

As Christians, we all need to grab a hold of the profound revelation that is being given to us in these four verses. Think of what God is trying to tell all of us with this revelation – that every single one of us, with no exceptions, can be treated equally and fairly with the Lord in how He will handle our lives – but only if we are willing to enter into this full surrender

with Him where He will now be the One to control and lead our lives in the direction that He will want them to go in.

***If you are willing to enter into this full surrender with the Lord, He will now handle both you and what He wants to do with your life with the same amount of care, love, compassion, and intensity as He would with any other fully surrendered Christian. There are no exceptions to this revelation. There is an equal amount of unconditional love, support, and guidance from God the Father for every single Christian who is willing to enter into this full surrender with Him.***

***This means that every single Christian has an equal chance and an equal window to become everything that God is calling them to become in Him in this life – and to fully achieve everything that He is wanting them to accomplish in this life.***

***This particular revelation is so powerful from the Lord, that I have chosen to put this article in the Sanctification section of our site. This revelation has to be believed on, grounded on, and acted on. This revelation has to become a permanent part of your right thinking.***

***If you will not believe that God will treat everyone fairly and justly in this realm of the full surrender – then you will never make it to the top of whatever mountain God is calling you to climb for Him in this life.***

In addition to the Christians who steadfastly and stubbornly refuse to commit and surrender their entire lives over to the Lord for His full handling – you then have many Christians who have made this full surrender with the Lord, but they are still continuing to remain stuck and grounded in their personal walks with the Lord.

And the reason some of these fully surrendered Christians are remaining grounded and stuck in their walk and calls with the Lord is because they have never been able to get over the mental hurdle of being able to believe in the revelation that is being given to us in these four verses in that God the Father is no respecter of persons, which will include every single one of them.

I have met many of these types of Christians in my own walk with the Lord. When I asked these people why they could not believe in this revelation since it is being given to us direct from the Bible itself – many of them have told me that it was because of some of the bad things that their own natural fathers had done to them in their past.

Even though they know this type of thinking is wrong since it is going against what the Bible is trying to tell us, there appears to be an emotional factor that comes into play, especially if there has been any type of severe abuse from their parents, especially the father.

When a child is born into a family, God has things set up in that the parents are supposed to properly love, nourish, and care for their child as they are growing into adulthood in the family. When that proper love, care, and nourishment is not there, and all the child ever hears or receives is verbal and/or physical abuse, then the child has a hard time learning how to trust anyone as they get older. They have been so beat up from all of this dysfunctional abuse, they even have a hard time in being able to trust in God Himself, even though they know God is all-perfect, all-loving, and is no respector of persons.

Since they were not treated fairly and justly by their natural parents, they have a hard time in being able to believe that God will treat them equally and fairly like He would anyone else. As a result of not being able to get this revelation properly worked into their mindset and way of thinking in this life, they end up remaining stuck and grounded in their own personal walks with the Lord, and they never climb or reach to all of the goals that God would have had in store for them in this life.

***This is why it is so vitally important that each and every Christian believe and act on this revelation – that you are just as important to God as anyone else is, and that He will give you the same amount of time, care, and attention that He would give to anyone else.***

***To think that the one and only all-powerful God of this entire universe can personally single you out, and tell you from His Word that you are just as important and just as precious in His sight as anyone else that He has ever created since the beginning of our world – is enough to knock you right off the couch when you really stop and meditate on this revelation.***

To those of you who are having a hard time in believing in this revelation – you will simply have to make up your mind whether or not you want to try and believe on it. If you do not, then you will never fulfill the divine destiny that God would have had in store for you in this life.

***You only have one chance and one opportunity to fulfill the divine destiny to which God has called you to in this life.***

***You can either choose to believe that God has a great plan and a great purpose for your life, and that He will give you just as much time and attention to be able to fulfill that***

***divine destiny as He would anyone else – or you can choose to believe that our God is not who the Bible says He is.***

***If you believe that the Holy Bible is truly the inspired and infallible Word of God – then you have to believe what the above 4 verses are trying to tell you. God cannot lie, and neither can His Word! This revelation is money in your bank if you can believe on it, ground on it, and act on it in this life.***

***If you can ground on this revelation as a major foundational truth in your walk with the Lord, God can then take full control of your life and remove all obstacles, barriers, and hindrances that will keep you from flying full force into the realm of His perfect will for your life, where an incredible adventure just lies waiting for you.***

***The choice is yours!***

One other thing once you enter into this realm with the Lord where you are now walking and operating in His perfect will for your life – do not ever compare where your walk is going in the Lord to where anyone else may be going in their walk with Him. The calls and divine assignments that God will pass your way in this life are all relative.

What this means is that if God calls you to be a stay-at-home mom for the first 20 years of your marriage so that you can properly raise up your children in their earlier formative years, that call will be just as important as someone who is being called by God to become the next president of the United States. The little finger is just as important as the right arm in the Body of Christ.

***What matters with the Lord is not what He calls you to do for Him in this life – but what you do with the call that He hands out to you. Your job is to do the best job you can at whatever God will be calling you to do for Him on a daily basis.***

God will be rewarding you for how well you work for Him, not for what He will actually call you to do. If you end up doing a better job for God raising up your children in the first 20 years of your marriage than what someone does with their call of being the next president of the United States – then you will be more highly rewarded once you enter into heaven than the one who may have received the bigger and heavier call such as being called to be the next president.

This is why the Bible tells us that many who are first in this world may end up being last, and those who are last in this world may end being first once we have all entered into heaven and everyone has gone through their own personal judgments at the Judgment Seat of Christ.



Once you have entered into this full surrender with the Lord where He will now be the One who will be in total control of your life and the direction it will now be heading – your job will be to the best job you can at whatever the Holy Spirit will lead you to do on a daily basis. If you can work this kind of bottom-line truth into your mindset, you will be less likely to become jealous of other Christians who may be walking in some of the more glamorous type calls than what you may be walking in.

***Remember – every Christian has a vital and important part on God's team. The job of the third baseman is just as important as the job of the pitcher or first baseman. All of these positions are relative in the big picture.***

***All that matters to the Lord is that you put the pedal to the metal for Him and try to accomplish, to the best of your abilities, everything that He will be calling you to do for Him in this life.***

***If you do – then you can leave this life knowing that you have not squandered and wasted your one and only chance to do something very meaningful for the Lord in this one earthly lifetime.***

***As a result, God will be highly rewarding you once you enter into heaven and meet Him face-to-face for your own personal judgment.***

## The 9 Fruits of the Holy Spirit

As you will see in the Scripture verse I will give you in this article – there is one very special incredible verse that will tell you that God the Father wants to transmit and impart 9 specific fruits of the Holy Spirit up into our personalities.

The first three articles that we have listed in our sanctification section all set the stage as to what God is looking to do with each one of us.

God wants all of us to enter into a true sanctification process with Him so that He can begin the process of molding, shaping, and transforming us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ. He wants to make us into a better and more holy people. He wants to transform us by the renewing of our minds. He wants to put right thinking into our thought process.

In the first article we have listed under this section titled “Sanctification,” I gave you the specific verses from Scripture that showed you that it is by the power of the Holy Spirit that this sanctification process is done with you in this life. However, you will not be a passive robot in all of this. You have to be willing to work in cooperation with the Holy Spirit once He begins to start this sanctification process within you.

Your job will be to get into the Word to find out exactly what it is God is going to want to change about you. You will need to find out exactly what godly qualities God will want you to try and “**put on**” into your personality, and what qualities He will want you to try and “**put away.**”

This article will be the first of a series of articles giving you all of the appropriate Scripture verses showing you exactly which qualities and attributes God will want to get worked into your personality, and which qualities He will want to pull out of you. And there is no better place to start this series of articles than with the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit.

If you want to start off by keying on some of the more positive, godly qualities that God would really like to get worked into your personality – really study and meditate on these 9 specific qualities.

***When God the Father purposely isolates and spells out 9 specific qualities that will be coming direct from His Holy Spirit – then He is really letting you know the extreme importance of these 9 specific fruits.***

***These 9 fruits are major fruits and qualities that are coming direct from God Himself – and every Christian should do the***

***best they can to work with the Holy Spirit in getting all 9 of these fruits worked into their personality.***

I will first start off by highlighting each of these 9 specific fruits so that you can have all 9 of them isolated right at the top of this article. I will then give you the Scripture verse where these 9 fruits are coming from, and then do a brief commentary on each one of these fruits so you can fully understand what each one of these fruits are all about, and how they can dramatically change the quality of your life and state of well-being if you are willing to allow the Holy Spirit to start to work all 9 of these fruits into your personality.

Here are the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit listed one right after the other in a bolded, numbered format:

- **Love**
- **Joy**
- **Peace**
- **Longsuffering**
- **Kindness**
- **Goodness**
- **Faithfulness**
- **Gentleness**
- **Self-control**

Now here is the specific verse from Scripture where these 9 fruits are being given to us by the Lord:

**“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control.”**  
**([Galatians 5:22](#))**

Before I get into the appropriate commentary on each of these nine fruits, note the following:

1. The word “Spirit” is with a capital “S” – which means these 9 fruits are coming directly from the Holy Spirit, not from ourselves.
2. What this means is that God’s love, God’s peace, God’s joy, and God’s goodness can start to be transmitted up into our personality. These are His divine attributes and personality qualities that will start to move into the core of our personality.
3. Think about the ramifications of this – that God the Father Himself is allowing us to share in a part of His divine nature by allowing His Holy Spirit to transmit and impart these nine divine qualities right up into our soul and personality!

This is why God the Father is specifically telling us in this verse that these 9 fruits are coming directly from His Holy Spirit – so that we can all fully appreciate the magnitude of such an experience.

Jesus has already told us that He is the vine and we are the branches. The branches draw their life from the vine, not vice versa. Just as the branch draws its life from the vine, so too must we draw our life directly from Jesus. Jesus will release His divine life directly into us through the Holy Spirit in the exact same way that the vine will release the life of the tree into the branches.

In one short, but incredible powerful Scripture verse, God the Father is giving all of us an incredible revelation on what can go on behind the scenes in the spiritual realm for those who are willing to work with Him in this sanctification process.

Now I will go on to describe what each one of these nine fruits are all about and give you definitions from some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries, thereby making it easier for you to work with the Holy Spirit once He starts to move in on you to try and impart some of these divine qualities and attributes into the core of your personality.

## 1. Love

If I had to rank all of the above fruits in their order of possible importance, the quality of love would have to be #1. And this is why it may have been listed as the first fruit in the above Scripture verse.

Due to the extreme importance of just this one quality, I am going to do another article on this quality and title it "The Power of Love." This article will also be listed in the Sanctification Section of our site. There are some very powerful and profound verses from the Bible on just this one quality alone, and it needs to have its own article to do it proper justice.

Here are some of the different definitions on what love is from the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries:

- **Unselfish, benevolent concern for another; brotherly concern; the object of brotherly concern or affection**
- **The self-denying, self-sacrificing, Christ-like love which is the foundation of all other graces**
- **Unselfish, loyal and benevolent concern for the well being of another**

- **The high esteem which God has for His human children and the high regard which they, in turn, should have for Him and other people**
- **To love, to have affection for someone; to like; to be a friend; the love of brothers for each other**

One of the main messages that comes through loud and clear from studying our Bible is the extreme importance that God the Father is placing on that everyone learn how to love Him, love ourselves, love one another, and to even go as far as to be able to love our enemies and those who will try and hurt us.

***However, our abilities as fallen humans to love one another is very limited. This is why it is so important for each and every Christian to work very closely with the Holy Spirit to get this fruit worked up into the core of our personalities.***

***It is only when the love of the Holy Spirit starts to flow and enter into our personalities can we even begin to love God, love ourselves, and love one another to the degree and to the intensity that God would really like to see from each one of us.***

To those of you who will be entering into this sanctification process with the Lord – this quality should be listed as the #1 quality you should really attempt to put on into the core of your soul and personality. The Holy Spirit will be moving on you very early and very quickly to get this quality imparted into your mind, soul, and emotions due to the extreme importance of it in your walk with the Lord.

You can be the greatest man of God and have some of the greatest gifts of God flowing through you – but if you are not walking with all of this in the spirit of love and humility, it will have all been for naught. More on this in the next article.

## 2. Joy

In the rough and tough world we live in with all of the crime, disorder, and bad things that can happen to anyone of us at anytime, many Christians have lost a lot of their joy in the Lord as a result of some of the beatings they have taken in this life.

I remember I had a bank teller tell me one time that she very seldom sees people smiling anymore when they come in and do business with her. She says no one seems to be happy anymore and everyone seems to be carrying around the weight of the world on their shoulders.

Again, with the imperfections of our own fallen nature, and then you combine that with how people react differently to adversity – some Christians have literally had most, if not all of their joy in the Lord, knocked right out of them.

***This is why the above verse from Galatians is so powerful and so needed by every single Christian today. In this verse, God is telling us that He can transmit some of His godly and divine qualities right up into the middle of us like filling up a new car with its first tank of gasoline. Many of God's people need a fresh infusion of His divine qualities due to the leaks that have occurred as a result of some of the beatings His people have taken during the course of their lives.***

And the quality of joy is a much needed quality in this day and age. No matter how bad of a beating you may have taken in this life – God can still fully heal, deliver, and restore you if you are willing to work with Him in this healing process. And one of the things that God can fully restore in you is your joy in Him. And not only can the Lord fully restore what joy you used to have in Him, but He can also increase it to a much greater degree and intensity due to the wording in the above verse – with the quality of joy being one of the 9 specific fruits of His Holy Spirit!

Here are some of the different definitions of what real joy is all about:

- **Great delight; gladness of heart**
- **The happy state that results from knowing and serving God**
- **That deep, abiding, inner rejoicing in the Lord**
- **To rejoice, to be glad**
- **Happy, joyful, cheerful, rejoicing, festive**

Realize that God can transmit this divine quality right up into your personality – and this will be His joy, not your joy, once it starts to flow up into you. And once God starts to release His joy into your system, you won't be able to help but feel it. And once you are able to start feeling it again, it will become much easier for you to learn how to walk back in it in your own daily walk with the Lord.

The Bible says that the joy of the Lord is your strength. This is why it is so important that every Christian have some level of God's joy operating through them in this life. Without God's joy operating in your life, things can begin to dry up. Nothing is ever fun anymore. Everything can start to become a chore. Before you know it, you will want to start to withdraw from others and life in general.

The joy of the Lord can really give you an incredible surge of strength in your own daily walk with God – especially when you have to take on some

really tough situations. This is why each Christian should work very closely with the Holy Spirit in not only getting Him to release His joy into their system, but to also keep it running through them on a very regular and consistent basis.

The Holy Spirit will do this for you if you are open to receiving this **divine infusion** from Him and are willing to work with Him to keep it properly flowing through you on a regular basis.

### 3. Peace

This is another major quality that we all need operating in our lives, especially with all of the uncertainty of this life and never knowing what is going to happen next.

Jobs are no longer as secure as they used to be. You never know when the company you work for may be bought out and your job will be gone in a flash. Half of all marriages are still ending up in divorce. We are all forced to constantly live under the threat of future terrorist activity, never knowing when or where the next attack will come from.

With all of this kind of heightened activity that we are all forced to deal with on a daily basis, it becomes very easy to lose your sense of peace, especially your peace in the Lord. Again, this is one of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit, and the Holy Spirit can really help you pick up the slack if you start losing your own sense of peace over some of the storm clouds that could come against you in this life.

***Realize that the Holy Spirit has His peace to give to you and that He can give it to you in great abundance.***

I have found that once His peace starts to flow up into your mind, soul, and emotions, it really is as the Bible says – a peace that surpasses all human understanding – especially when that peace comes in right in the middle of a severe storm cloud that you may be going through.

Here is how the quality of peace is described in some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries:

- **The presence and experience of right relationships**
- **The tranquility of soul**
- **Sense of well-being and fulfillment that comes from God and is dependent on His presence**

- **The inner tranquility and poise of the Christian whose trust is in God through Christ**
- **Tranquility, rest, harmony, the absence of agitation or discord**

The quality of peace should be one of the main qualities that you should try and get worked up into your soul through the Holy Spirit in the sanctification process. Without the peace of God operating in your life, you could become very easily rattled, shaken, tormented, and knocked right off your game in the Lord the first time any kind of adversity should ever come your way.

## 4. Longsuffering

One of the main definitions of the word longsuffering is that it is referring to patience. And patience is another sorely needed quality in the fast paced world in which we live in today.

Just watch people standing in line at the grocery store or at your local fast food restaurant and watch how short some people's fuses are today. Road rage is still a major problem on some of our highways. Look at someone the wrong way and they will want to try and take your head off. Many people have been killed or seriously injured because someone lost his temper over something that was very trivial.

With the fast-paced ways of our society, many people have had their fuses shortened up and it thus takes very little to set them off. As a result, many people have very little patience operating in their personalities today.

For Christians, this poses a major dilemma. One of the ways of our God is that He is a very patient and longsuffering God. His ways are not our ways. And one of the things you will find out very early on about His ways is that He works on a much slower time frame than we do. And unless you learn to adjust to His slower way of working things out, you will find yourself easily losing your patience with Him and how He wants to work things out in your life.

God operates on a much longer and slower time frame than we are used to operating in the fast paced world in which we live in. You will really have to work with the Holy Spirit on this particular quality to get it properly worked up into your personality. The reason for this is that your own impatience will start to act up and try to override the patience and longsuffering that the Holy Spirit will try and transmit to you. At times, it may become of battle of wills – your will against His will.



But once the Holy Spirit starts to try and manifest this quality up into your personality, then you have to try and move with it and allow it to get worked into your mind and emotions. If you do, then His patience will start to override your impatience, and before you know it, your fuses will start to lengthen and you will not lose your patience like you used to do.

Here are the different definitions for the word longsuffering:

- **Forbearance, patience**
- **Patient endurance and steadfastness under provocation**
- **Forbearance under ill-will, with no thought of retaliation**
- **Patience, endurance, steadfastness and forbearance**
- **Forbearance under suffering and endurance in the face of adversity**
- **Ability to endure persecution and ill-treatment**

With the way all of these definitions are reading, you can really see why we all need the patience and longsuffering of the Holy Spirit to start operating in our souls and personalities – especially when we are forced to face any kind of adversity. Sometimes it will be the patience and longsuffering of the Holy Spirit that will be the only thing that will give you the ability to last the entire length of a bad trial.

***Learn how to ride and flow with the patience of the Holy Spirit in your daily life and walk with the Lord – and you will then be able to enter into a much more restful, peaceful state within your mind and emotions.***

## 5. Kindness

As a result of more people being impatient, having short fuses, and with everyone always being in a hurry – many people have lost the ability to treat others with kindness and respect. A kind word, a kind action to another person can really do wonders for them.

When you really study the life of Jesus in the New Testament, you can really tell how kind He always was with other people in His dealings with them. Jesus is without question, the ultimate role model for all of us of someone who was fully walking and operating in all 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit.

The quality of kindness will go hand in hand with the quality of love. Once the Holy Spirit starts to transmit His love up into you, the quality of kindness will follow right along with it. It will then become much easier for you to be able to be kind to others once the love of God starts to flow more into your personality.

You cannot help but be more kind to others if God's love is flowing through you. This is why the quality of love has to be the main quality that you really concentrate on getting more of from the Holy Spirit. Once the love of God starts to flow and operate through you to touch others, many of the other fruits of the Holy Spirit will then start to follow right after it in domino fashion.

Here are some of the different definitions of what real kindness is all about:

- **Quality or state of being kind**
- **The steadfast love that maintains relationships through gracious aid in times of need**
- **Goodness of heart, serviceable, good, gracious, pleasant**
- **Love for mankind, hospitality, acts of kindness, readiness to help, human [friendship](#), benevolence, taking thought of others**
- **Goodness in action, sweetness of disposition, gentleness in dealing with others, affability**
- **The ability to act for the welfare of those taxing your patience**

As you can see from some of these different definitions, this is a very beautiful quality to have transmitted up into your soul and personality by the Holy Spirit. Not only will you be able to touch others with this godly quality, but you will also be able to touch yourself – because you will feel so much better about yourself if you can learn how to treat others with much more kindness and respect in your daily dealings and affairs with them.

## 6. Goodness

The Bible says that it is the goodness of God that will lead sinners to repentance and salvation. The quality of goodness is another real powerful quality to have operating through you.

**This particular quality has a real drawing power to it.** Not only does the goodness of God draw people direct to Him, but this fruit of goodness operating in a believer can also draw people direct to God through the actual believer.

Spirit-filled saints who are walking with many of these fruits operating through them are like a magnet. Many people who have been saved through an individual believer say that what drew them in was the love and goodness they saw shining through that believer.

Jesus says that we are to carry His light and let that light shine before men and not attempt to hide it. Part of His light are these 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit shining through an anointed believer. Nonbelievers are really drawn to someone who has some degree of these nine fruits manifesting through their personalities.

However, there is something extra special about the quality of goodness. Many Christians can effectively witness to others by just living right and being a good example and role model for others to follow. Many nonbelievers carefully watch and study some Christians because they know there is something really different about them.

One of the key qualities a nonbeliever will pick up on in a solid Christian is this quality of goodness. This quality has an ability to really get down deep into the core of a believer's personality. To those who really have this quality, you can tell that it is something operating deep down inside of them. This quality is not something that waivers like some of the other qualities can do. These people are good down to their very cores of their personalities. You can see it and feel it when you get around these types of people.

As a result of seeing this God-like goodness deeply ingrained into their personalities, there is an immediate drawing towards them. You feel totally safe being around them because you know you can totally trust them, and you know they would never deliberately hurt you.

Children are quick to sense and pick up on this quality in people who really have it. These types of Christians draw children and adults to them like magnets. This is why this particular fruit and quality is so important for each Christian to have. Because with it, you can easily draw many more people to the Lord.

If the goodness of God will lead people to repentance and salvation with Him – then the goodness of God operating through an anointed believer will have the ability to draw nonbelievers into salvation. And the goodness of God can be transmitted and worked up into your personality through the power of the Holy Spirit. You can have the actual goodness of God

shining through you to reach others if you are willing to work with the Holy Spirit in this sanctification process.

Now here are some of the different definitions of what this quality is all about:

- **Beneficence, ready to do good, love in action**
- **Kindness in actual manifestation, virtue equipped for action, a bountiful propensity both to will and to do what is good, intrinsic goodness producing a generosity and a Godlike state or being**
- **The word beneficence means the fact or quality of being kind or doing good**

This particular quality is a very powerful fruit to have operating in your personality because of the drawing power it has in it. And the beautiful part about this fruit is that this quality is so pure in its goodness – it does not have any manipulative qualities within it.

In other words, a truly good person could not even begin to try and use you or manipulate you for their own personal gain because they are too good and righteous to even begin to think along those lines. This is why these kinds of people are so trustworthy and why so many people are drawn to them – because you feel so safe by just being around them.

## 7. Faithfulness

In the times we live in with half of all marriages still ending up in divorce, and with many people getting back-stabbed in the workplaces with people they thought they could initially trust – this particular quality is one that is really needed in our day and age. This quality is not only needed in our own personal relationship with God, but it is also needed in our own personal relationships with our friends and our families.

Once you are saved and have entered into a true personal relationship with the Lord – one of the first things you will really have to grab a hold of is holding fast to the Lord and staying faithful to Him for the rest of your eternal life. Once you are saved and have entered into a true personal relationship with the Lord, there is no turning back – ever!

This is what got the Jewish people in major trouble with God the Father back in the Old Testament. They could not stay faithful and loyal to Him on a consistent and regular basis. There were times that God the Father was literally calling them harlots and adulterers because they would not stay faithful to Him, especially when they kept chasing after other gods.

God the Father really holds this particular quality in high esteem, and this is one quality that He will really expect you to operate very strongly in – not only in your own personal relationship with Him, but also in your other personal relationships with your family and friends. In other words, He wants you to be faithful and loyal to your spouses, to your children, to your parents, and to your good friends.

Too many people are bailing out from their spouses and their children if they hit a few minor speed bumps in their marriages. Too many spouses are having affairs behind their spouse's back, thereby destroying all of the trust and faithfulness that may have been built up in the early years of their marriages. Too many fathers are bailing out of their marriages, and then forgetting and forsaking their own children – and sometimes for good, never wanting to see any of them ever again!

If God brings you a wonderful mate, wonderful children, and good and wonderful friends – then He will expect you to stay loyal and faithful to all of them in your own personal relationships with them. A true friend will stay by your side for life – through thick and thin and for better or for worse. Just as God will stay faithful to you in His own personal relationship with you – He will expect you to stay loyal and faithful in your own personal relationships with the other people in your life.

Now here are what some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries have to say about this particular quality:

- **Fidelity which makes one true to his promise and faithful to his task**
- **Steadfast, dedicated, dependable and worthy of trust**
- **Steadfast, unchanging and thoroughly grounded in relation to the other**
- **Dependability, loyalty and stability**

With the self-centered and materialistic world in which we now live in, where many people's only goals and ambitions are to get as much as they can out of this life while they still can – I am afraid this is one quality that is in very short supply. Most people are lucky if they manage to make 2 or 3 good, loyal, and faithful friends in this lifetime.

This is one quality that God the Father is really watching all of us on. He is watching who is going to stay true, loyal, and faithful to Him – and who will stay true, loyal, and faithful to the friends and family that are brought into our lives.

The flesh is strong – especially in the area of wanting to satisfy its lust for the material things of this life. This is why this quality is one of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit. We all need the faithfulness of the Holy Spirit worked into us to help us keep loyal to God, family, and friends.

## 8. Gentleness

Many men may draw back a bit from this next fruit, which is the quality of gentleness. However, Jesus was fully incarnated into a human flesh body – but this incarnation was done as a man – fully Man and fully God.

Since Jesus walked our earth as a man – the Son of Man – study His actions very carefully when you read the gospels and how He handled different types of people. There were times that He would engage and set people straight, like He did with some of the Scribes and Pharisees. But there were other times that He dealt with people very gently, with kindness and love. His gentle way of handling some of these people is what really jumps out at you when you really study how He handled different types of people.

Again, Jesus is the perfect role model for all of us to study and learn from – especially with how He handled people while He was walking down here on our earth. For men in particular, His actions and behavior towards others should be a major study for all of us and we should seek to pattern our own daily walk after Him. And one of the divine qualities that He had operating in Him with great abundance was the quality of gentleness.

The quality of gentleness is another major quality needed in our world today. So many people have been beat up and hurt in their dealings with other people – that just a gentle word, a gentle touch from another Christian can really open up the door for that person to be able to receive Jesus and His healing, saving, and deliverance power into their lives.

Once you really start walking in the Holy Spirit with His divine fruits operating and flowing through you – you will really be able to feel and sense when you should handle a certain person or a certain type of situation with more of a touch of gentleness rather than with any kind of stern rebuke or condemnation. There is a time for tough love – but there are also times that just a gentle and loving touch is all that is really needed to properly handle a certain situation.

The Holy Spirit will guide you in all of this. Just realize that the quality of gentleness is one of the 9 fruits of the Spirit, and this is one of the fruits that He would really like to get worked into your personality, especially in being able to use it when dealing with and helping out others.

Parents especially need this fruit operating through them, as it is very easy to get out of balance with the way you are correcting your children. Sometimes more of a tough love approach is needed, but at other times more of a gentle approach will be better suited for the situation.

If all your children ever hear from you are stern words of rebuke and criticism, and it is never properly balanced out with words and actions of love, kindness, and gentleness – then after a certain period of time your children will start to pull away from you, and they then will have no more desire to want to establish any type of good, solid, loving relationship with you.

Now here are some of the different definitions on the quality of gentleness:

- **Mildness combined with tenderness**
- **Gracious, kindly disposition, controlled strength**
- **A disposition that is even-tempered, tranquil, balanced in spirit, unpretentious and that has passions under control**
- **A character that is equitable, reasonable, forbearing, moderate, fair and considerate**
- **Power and strength under control**
- **Willing to pardon injuries, correct faults. One who rules his spirit well**

Not only will other people love and gravitate towards you more if you learn how to walk in this quality – but you will be at much more peace with yourself since you won't always have to be fighting and striving with others when trying to help them out.

## 9. Self-Control

Last, but not certainly least, is the quality of self-control. **This one is huge, and I mean huge!** Once you start to enter into a true sanctification process with the Lord – expect the Holy Spirit to move on you very early with this specific quality. The reason for this is that we all have a certain amount of character flaws operating in our personalities. There are some bad and negative qualities that will have to go.

The Bible tells us that our spirits and our flesh will war against each other in this life. Our flesh wants immediate self-gratification at all costs and will stop at nothing to try and get it. Our spirits know that some of our

fleshly desires are not right for us and as a result, there will be a tug of war between the two – and sometimes it will be a major tug of war. And the only thing that will be able to control and curb some of the desires of our flesh is the quality of self-control.

Since we all live in a very self-centered and materialistic type world today, many people have very poor impulse control. If they see something they immediately want, they will do anything they can to try and get it. They will not be denied until they get what they are going after. These people are obviously very weak in the quality of self-control. This is why the Bible tells us that if we can learn how to really walk in the Holy Spirit, then we will not fulfill the lusts of our flesh.

Due to our fallen and sinful natures, all of us are weak to some degree in the quality of self-control. This is why God the Father made sure to have this fruit listed as one of the 9 fruits of His Holy Spirit. We all need God's self-control operating in our lives and in our personalities if we are going to have any hope in getting cleaned up and properly sanctified to the degree that He would like to get us to in this life.

If you do not have God's self-control operating through you – you will have very little victory over such things as bad tempers, judgmental and critical spirits, an unforgiving spirit, and vices such as smoking and the abuse of alcohol.

Once the Holy Spirit starts this sanctification process within you – be prepared for some major battles and tugs of wars with Him once He starts coming after some of the negative qualities operating in your personality.

But if you are willing to yield to Him and allow Him to start to work all 9 of these fruits into your personality – then you will find yourself starting to grow in ways and in areas that you never thought were possible in this life. His supernatural power in this area will blow you away once you see how far He can really take you to become the person that God would like you to become in Him in this lifetime.

Here are some of the definitions of what the quality of self-control is all about:

- **Temperance, rational restraint of natural impulses**
- **Sober, temperate, calm and dispassionate approach to life, having mastered personal desires and passions**
- **Calls for a self-disciplined life following Christ's example of being *in the world but not of the world***
- **Restraint or discipline exercised over one's behavior**



The above definitions perfectly describe what God is looking for once He starts to work and transmit this quality up into our personalities. This specific quality is one of the major keys in being able to get any kind of victory over some of the lusts and desires of our flesh.

## Conclusion

All of the above definitions on each one of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit give you a perfect description of what each one of them are all about, and why God the Father really wants to work each one of these 9 fruits into our personalities.

As you can see when reviewing each one of them, they are all very powerful – and they not only have the ability to help change, transform, and sanctify you – but they also have the ability to touch all of those around you.

***Nothing will draw nonbelievers and believers alike to the Lord than a truly sanctified saint in the Lord who is walking and operating in all 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit. If you are willing to allow the Holy Spirit to work and transmit all 9 of these fruits up into your personality to some appreciable degree in this life – you will then become a light that will literally radiate the presence of God Himself through your soul and personality.***

***You have no idea how many people you will be able to save, touch, witness to, and help disciple if you have these fruits operating through you. These fruits will give you a credibility with God and with other people that no degree or title can give you in this life. This sanctification process is the ultimate, highest aim and goal with God for our lives.***

***For those of you who are not afraid to let God begin this deeper sanctifying work in your life – keep these 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit directly in front of you – and work very closely with the Holy Spirit once He starts to manifest these fruits up into your personality.***

***These fruits will be coming directly from Him. They will be His love, His goodness, His joy, and His peace that will start to flow into you. But you will still have to do your part in all of this. Once these divine attributes start to be released into your personality by the Holy Spirit – your job will then be to start to walk and operate in them.***

If the Holy Spirit starts to release His quality of love into your personality, but you start refusing to walk and operate in that love in your words and actions to others – then He will start to pull it back from you after a reasonable length of time.

If He starts to manifest His quality of self-control in you in an effort to try and take out some of the negative qualities that He will not want operating in your personality, and you refuse to rely on that self-control, and you override it and continue to operate in those negative qualities – then again, He will pull it back from you until you are ready to work in cooperation with Him.

***This sanctification process is a two way street. God is more than willing and anxious to do His part – but you will have to be willing to do your part. And your part will be to learn what changes God will want to make with you – and then start to live, walk, and operate in those specific changes once the Holy Spirit starts this supernatural, sanctification process within you. This part God cannot do for you.***

***Jesus gave Peter the power and ability to be able to walk on water. But there was one thing Peter had to do before that supernatural power was released to him. He had to get out of the boat and start walking straight forward on that power. It was only when he got out of the boat and started walking straight forward did the supernatural power of God manifest that allowed him to literally walk on water!***

***It's the exact same way in this sanctification realm with the Lord. God, through the Holy Spirit, will give you the supernatural power to change, transform, and sanctify you – but you will have to be like Peter and be willing to live and walk in that supernatural power before it can really start to work to change and sanctify you.***

Jesus is coming back for a Bride that will be without spot or blemish. He is calling His Church to clean up their act and allow His Holy Spirit to begin this deeper sanctifying work in their lives. However, the choice is up to each individual believer. Sanctification is not something that can be forced upon anyone. God really respects everyone's free will and He will never force His will or His ways on anyone.

To those of you who will decide to enter into this sanctification process with the Lord – realize that all of this will not occur overnight. The Holy Spirit will set the pace and timetable that He will want to work with you on. You can perfectly trust Him to handle each of the areas that He will want to get into.

Though some of this may be a bit painful at times, since none of us likes to admit that we have anything that needs to be changed, let the Holy Spirit take you as far as He will want to go with you in this realm – and I guarantee you that your life and your state of well-being will all be changed for the better – much better!

## The Power of Love

This article will serve as a follow up to our article titled, "The 9 Fruits of the Holy Spirit." In that article, I gave you the verse from Galatians where the Lord is telling us there are 9 specific fruits that He can transmit up into our personalities through His Holy Spirit. In this verse from Galatians, the very first quality that is listed as one of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit is the quality of love – and I do not think this was by accident!

As you will see in the Scripture verses I will list below, there is no doubt in my mind that the quality of love is the #1 quality that God would like to get worked into our souls and personalities. Even nonbelievers, atheists, and agnostics can see the power of love and how it has the ability to change people and their lives when it is properly handled and walked out.

Hollywood has made tons of movies just on the power of love – especially the special love that can occur between a man and woman in a romantic relationship. Even hard, tough, grown men can be brought to tears when watching a real well made movie made about the power of love.

***The quality of love is truly universal – as it literally transcends peoples, nations, and religions. Love is truly the universal language of this world, and people from all different walks of life recognize it for what it truly is and understand the power that is in it.***

Then when you read and study the Bible – you see the major emphasis God the Father is placing on it when He tells us that He wants us to love Him, love ourselves, and to love one another.

So if the quality of love is recognized by all peoples and all nations, then why is it that throughout the course of human history there has been so many wars, so much hatred, so much crime, and so much inhumanity done to our fellow man? If everyone knows what love is, then how could so many people throughout the course of our human history commit the evil and atrocious acts they have committed?

Even in our present day and age people still have not learned from the past, as there is just as much hatred and evil operating in this world today as there has ever been. The Bible even tells us that the love of many will grow cold in the latter days, which means things are going to actually go from bad to worst in the coming years.

If man really knows what love is, then why can't more people act, operate, and walk in that love so we can all live in peace and harmony with one another? Why do so many people have to rob, rape, kill, plunder, and steal from one another? No matter what one's religious beliefs and ideologies may be – there is simply no excuse for some of the horrible barbaric acts of murder, assaults, abductions, robberies, and rapes that we see on an everyday basis.

As Christians, we all know that part of the answer as to why men cannot love one another in the way that God would really like from us is due to the fallen sin natures that we have all been born into this world with as a result of the curse of Adam and Eve. The Bible tells us that every single one of us has been born into this world in sin and iniquity. This is why Jesus had to come to die for all of us – because we have all sinned and have fallen way short of the glory of our God.

However, even born-again believers have problems in being able to walk in love to the degree that God would really like in our everyday lives. We all know that God is expecting us to be able to walk in His love – but we still have problems in being able to love God, our families, our friends, and even our own selves to the degree and intensity that He would really like from all of us.

We read in the Bible about all of the verses that God wants us to walk very strongly in this quality, but we still seem to fall way short of being able to actually do it in our real lives. If we all have the Holy Spirit living and operating on the inside of us, then why is it that we cannot seem to draw more of His love up into our personalities so that we can all walk with more of this quality operating in our lives?

I believe the answer lies in the last article I did under this section titled, "The 9 Fruits of the Holy Spirit."

Too many Christians are trying to walk in the quality of love operating out of their own strength, out of their own emotions, and out of their own flesh. Granted, God the Father wants us to do the best we can to try and put this quality into the core of our personalities. But our best is not going to be good enough in this area to get the job done with the way God would really like.

The reason for this is that we have all been born with these fallen, imperfect, and sinful natures. This means that we are not capable of walking in perfect love, no matter how hard we may try in our own natural strength. So what is the answer if we are not capable of walking in perfect love in the way that our Lord would really like for us to be able to do?

***To those believers who are really wanting to learn how to walk in the real love of God in their lives – there is only one way to be able to do this – and that is to learn how to draw that love from the Holy Spirit.***

***And the only way that you can get the Holy Spirit to release His love into you as one of His 9 fruits is that you have to be willing to enter into a true sanctification process with the Lord where He can then begin to start the process of transforming you into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ.***

***There is no other way! There are no other shortcuts that you can take to get this accomplished. It is only when the very love of God Himself starts to flow into your personality can you even begin to love God, love yourself, and love other people to the degree and intensity that He would really like from you.***

Once the Holy Spirit begins this sanctification process in your life – your job will be to learn how to live, walk, and operate in the divine qualities and attributes He will start to transmit into your personality.

***Once the Holy Spirit starts to transmit His quality of love into the very core of your personality, your job will then be to learn how to walk in that love in your words and actions with others. Actually, once the Holy Spirit starts to transmit and impart His divine love into you, it will then become much easier for you to be able to love others in the way God wants you to be able to love them.***

***Once you start to feel God's love for His people, you won't be able to help yourself in feeling that same love for them since God's love will start to mesh with your own natural love. Once God's love starts to flow and mesh into what limited love you already have in your personality – then you will be able to start to love other people in the way that God had initially intended for all of us to be able to do.***

***The missing ingredient in all of this is obviously the love of the Holy Spirit. It is only when the Holy Spirit starts to release His love into your personality as one of His 9 fruits can you truly begin to love God, love yourself, and love other people in the way God intended.***

Trying to love others with what limited imperfect love you may already have operating in you will never get the job done – either to your own satisfaction or to the satisfaction of God Himself. This is why Jesus has

told us that without Him we can do nothing, especially in the area of being able to get properly sanctified in Him.

In this article, I will give you some of the best verses from Scripture on the quality of love, and why God the Father is placing such a strong emphasis that we learn how to walk in it in our personal relationship with Him, with ourselves, and with the other people in our lives.

God the Father is really raising the bar on this one specific quality as you will be able to see with the way that He has worded some of these verses. He is making some extreme and radical statements with what He is expecting from all of us with just this one quality.

When you first read what these verses are telling us to do in reference to this particular quality, you will really be able to feel and sense your own shortcomings in this area. But again, realize this is where the Holy Spirit will be coming in big time. Just realize that God knows you cannot reach the level that He is really looking for – and that it will only be possible for you to reach this level only if the love of the Holy Spirit Himself is operating and flowing through you.

When you really study and meditate on the verses I will list below, you can sum all of them up in one simple statement. God is looking for you to be able to love in 6 different areas – all with the love of the Holy Spirit being available to you to help you out in each one of these areas. God wants you to be able to fully love in all 6 of these realms. You are to learn how to:

- **Love God**
- **Love yourself**
- **Love your family**
- **Love your friends**
- **Love your neighbors**
- **Love your enemies**

You will notice there are 6 specific areas that God will want you to really be able to love in. Bottom line – God will want you to love right across the board – from loving Him down to being able to love the worst of your enemies. The first 4 areas are much easier to learn how to do than the last two areas – especially the last one in being able to love your enemies and those who will try and hurt you in this life.

Loving most of your family and friends is very easy because of the strong natural bonds that we have already established with them. But learning how to love some of your neighbors who you have no real special bond with, or complete total strangers will be much harder for you to do, especially with the way that our world has become with so many more people keeping to themselves and being afraid to trust anyone.

However, this can be done with the help of the Holy Spirit. Once you start to feel the love of God Himself for some of these people, it will then become much easier for you to befriend some of these people and help them out when the need may arise.

Again, Jesus is the perfect example of someone who was always helping total strangers. When you study what He did as He was walking on our earth, He was always stopping and talking to people, along with helping, teaching, saving, healing and delivering some of these people when the need would arise. He was always there to meet their needs, especially their spiritual needs.

***Just as Jesus was able to walk in perfect love in His words and actions with other people – so too can we learn how to walk in that same godly love if we will allow the Holy Spirit to enter us into this sanctification process where God the Father can then begin to work all 9 fruits of His Holy Spirit up into the very cores of our personalities.***

Though we will never be able to love in the perfect way that Jesus can since none of us will ever become the fourth person of the Holy Trinity – we can still try to do the best we can in our dealings and relationships with other people.

Now I will give you some of the best and most profound verses from the Bible on the quality of love, how powerful of a thing it really is, and exactly what God the Father is looking for from each one of us in this area. I will break these Scripture verses down under their appropriate captions so you can fully grasp the revelation the Lord is trying to give you in this area.

## **1. Love is the Greatest of All the Virtues**

These first two verses really set the stage on how high God is really ranking the quality of love. As you will see with the way these two verses are being worded, God the Father is placing the quality of love as #1 in the entire scheme of things.

The first verse lists three specific virtues, with faith being one of them. And then it ends stating that love is the greatest of these three virtues – including being greater than faith itself. Just stop and think for a minute what God is trying to tell us with just this one statement in that having the love of God operating and flowing through us is even better and greater than having higher levels of faith in Him.

Without faith in God – we cannot connect to Him. Without faith in God – there can be no miracles. Faith is our lifeline to the Lord. Without faith in



God, we would be spiritually dead in the Lord. So why would God say the quality of love is even greater than our lifeline to Him, which is our faith?

I believe God is trying to tell us something very important with this statement, and the apostle Paul perfectly captures what that something is in the second verse I will list below. Paul makes one of the most classic statements ever made on the importance of love and how this quality fits into the big picture as far as God is concerned.

***Paul says that you can have the greatest gift of tongues, the greatest gift of prophecy, the greatest understanding of all the mysteries and knowledge of God, have the highest levels of faith in God, and do some of the greatest works for God – but if you do not have the love of God operating in your life, then all of this gifting, power, knowledge, and works in the Lord will all be for nothing! I repeat – all for nothing!***

***It will have all been for naught when you have to end up giving a full account of yourself to the Lord on your day of judgment with Him. Bottom line – all of your accomplishments in the Lord, and all of the good fruit you may have produced for the Lord in this lifetime will mean absolutely nothing to Him if you did not walk all of this out in the spirit of love.***

***This is why each and every Christian should make it their #1 goal and priority in this life to learn how to walk in the love of God for their lives.***

Nothing will touch other people more deeply than having the love of God shining through you and your life. With the quality of love being an universal language that everyone can understand and witness to – this quality, more than any other quality, will be the main one that can lead nonbelievers to salvation in the Lord, and lead other believers into a deeper walk with God. I do not think it is a coincidence that the quality of love is listed as the very first fruit of the Holy Spirit in the verse from Galatians on the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit.

Here are the first two profound verses that will show us how important the quality of love really is in the big picture.

- **“And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.” (1 Corinthians 13:13)**
- **“Though I speak with the tongues of men and angels, but have not love, I have become as sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and**

**though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing.” (1 Corinthians 13:1)**

This last verse from Paul perfectly puts the quality of love in proper perspective for all of our lives, in that everything we do for the Lord has to be done in love.

## 2. Walk in Love

These next set of verses will tell us that we all have to learn how to **“walk in love,”** how to **“stir up love,”** and how to **“love from a pure heart.”** They tell us that everything we do for God down here has to **“be done with love.”**

These verses are all good, basic, foundational verses on the subject of love. Here they are:

- “Therefore be followers of God as dear children. **And walk in love,** as Christ also has loved us and given Himself for us ... ”  
(*Ephesians 5:1*)
- **“Now the purpose of the commandment is love from a pure heart,** from a good conscience, and from sincere faith ... ”  
(*1 Timothy 1:5*)
- **“Let all that you do be done with love.”** (*1 Corinthians 16:14*)
- **“And let us consider one another in order to stir up love and good works,** not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together ... ” (*Hebrews 10:24*)
- “Finally, all of you be of one mind, **having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tenderhearted, be courteous;** not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling ... ”  
(*1 Peter 3:8*)

Simply put – God wants everything that we do for Him in this life to be done in love. We simply have to learn how to walk with His love operating in our lives. There is no other way to live this life but walking it out in the love of God towards Him, towards ourselves, and towards one another.

### 3. What Love Is

In my article on the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit, I gave you the definition on love from some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries. For the sake of this article, I am going to go ahead and restate these definitions, and then add several more verses from Scripture on what some of the qualities that are in true love from a pure heart.

Here are some of the definitions on love from some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries:

- **Unselfish, benevolent concern for another; brotherly concern; the object of brotherly concern or affection**
- **The self-denying, self-sacrificing, Christ-like love which is the foundation of all other graces**
- **Unselfish, loyal and benevolent concern for the well being of another**
- **The high esteem which God has for His human children, and the high regard which they in turn should have for Him and other people**
- **To love, to have affection for someone; to be a friend; the love of brothers for each other**

Now here are two very good verses on what is found in true love:

- **"There is no fear in love; but perfect love casts out fear, because fear involves torment. But he who fears has not been made perfect in love." (1 John 4:18)**
- **"Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails." (1 Corinthians 13:4-8)**

This last verse from Paul is a real mouthful. True love will always be kind. True love will never flaunt itself for attention. True love will never be jealous of others and their accomplishments. True love will always be thinking of others and their welfare. True love will never rejoice or wallow in evil and sin.

The first verse from John states that there is no fear in love. Those who are trying to love you by trying to rule over you in fear are not truly loving you in the way God has intended. Those husbands who are physically and/or verbally abusing their wives in an effort to try and control them with fear are not operating in true love, contrary to what they may be thinking in their warped and debased minds.

They verbally and/or physically beat their wives down and then pick them up, and then tell them how much they love them so they can keep on perpetuating this cycle of violence and abuse. This is not true love – this is pure evil!

The above verse from John says that perfect love will cast out all fear. If these men truly loved their wives, they would not be physically or verbally abusing and violating them in the ways they have been. These kind of men are an abomination to the Lord – and what they call love, God calls pure evil.

So many people's idea of love for another is to try and manipulate other people for their own personal gain and profit. The last verse from Paul says that true love will never think of evil, much less ever do evil to another – and that it will not seek its own, which means it will never attempt to love another person for their own personal gain, profit, or ego.

As a result of all the contamination that is in this fallen world, many people have lost the ability to truly love other people in the pure way that God has intended. This is why all Christians need the sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit started in their lives – so God can begin to get them cleaned up in their thinking and in the way they act towards others.

## 4. Loving God

Now that we know that love is the greatest of all the virtues and qualities, and that God wants all of us to learn how to walk in His love – exactly where is the love to be aimed at?

The very first thing your love should be aimed at and centered on is direct to God Himself! God wants to establish a one-on-one, intimate, personal relationship with each one of us – and in this personal relationship God will want you to truly learn how to love Him from your heart and from your soul.

These next set of verses are all very intense in the way they are being worded. God is using maximum intense wording in the way that He is expressing Himself on this issue.

***The first two verses are telling us that God is wanting us to love Him with all of our hearts and with all of our souls. In other words, God is wanting you to love Him with maximum intensity from your mind, heart, and emotions.***

In the first verse I will show you, Jesus is telling everyone that the greatest of all the commandments of God the Father is that we learn how to love God with all of our mind, with all of our soul, and with all of our heart. When Jesus is telling us that this is the greatest of all of God's commandments – then you know the extreme importance that the Lord is placing on just this one commandment.

The other verses are telling you that God is wanting you to press in and seek after Him with all of your heart and with all of your soul – which again means to seek after Him with all of your mind, heart, and emotions.

These two types of verses fit perfectly together with one another. If you truly love God with all of your heart and with all of your soul – then you will want to press in and seek after Him with that same kind of intensity from your heart and soul.

Many Christians say they love God, but they really do not prove it to Him by pressing in and seeking after Him in their daily walk with Him. If you are really in love with God, then you will have a strong natural desire to want to seek after Him and include Him in every part of your daily life.

Our God is a God of maximum intensity. The Bible says that His love for us is like a consuming fire. In the same way, God would like to have that love returned back to Him with some level of intensity from our mind and our heart. This can be done with the help of the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit can begin to transmit His divine love into your personality as one of His 9 fruits so you can then start to learn how to love God in the way and with the intensity that He would really like.

Again, all of these verses are major foundational verses on the love that God would like all of us to have for Him in our own personal relationship with Him.

1. **“Teacher, which is the great commandment in the Law?”  
Jesus said to him, “You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and great commandment.” (Matthew 22:36)**
2. **“And the Lord your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your descendants, to love the Lord your God with all of your heart and with all of your soul, that you may live.” (Deuteronomy 30:6)**

3. **"And you will seek me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart." (Jeremiah 29:13)**
4. **"... and you will find Him if you seek Him with all your heart and with all your soul." (Deuteronomy 4:29)**
5. **"They entered into a covenant to seek the Lord God of their fathers with all their heart and with all their soul ..." (2 Chronicles 15:12)**
6. **" ... you have not been as My servant David, who kept My commandments and who followed Me with all His heart to do what was right in My eyes ..." (1 Kings 14:8)**

In this last verse, God the Father is paying a very big compliment to King David, who ended up being the greatest King that Israel has ever had. He says that David followed after Him with all of his heart – which again is denoting someone who was following God with maximum intensity, maximum love, and maximum loyalty.

If you are truly in love with God, then you will spend some type of regular quality time seeking after Him, His ways, His knowledge, and His direct involvement in every aspect of your life.

God will become your best Friend, your best Lover, and your one and only true loving Father. This is why Jesus is referred to as the Bridegroom and we as His bride. This analogy that God is giving us is showing us the kind of intense and passionate love that He wants all of us to have in our own personal relationship with Him.

## 5. Loving Yourself

In addition to loving God and others, God also wants us to learn how to love ourselves. This is one area where you can really get out of balance on, with many people either going to one extreme or the other.

In the very self-centered society in which now live in, many people have gone to the one extreme of being totally narcissistic – which means they are only concerned about their own personal well-being and their own agendas to the exclusion of anyone else. The world totally revolves around them and their own personal agendas, and they will do everything and anything they can to try to get their own way on things. Most of these types of people are incapable of bonding or loving anyone else but themselves. We all know people who are like this.

Then you have the other extreme – where some people literally want to annihilate their own personalities. They start misinterpreting certain

Scriptures verses on what it means to die to one's self, thinking that God wants them to completely forget about themselves and focus entirely on serving Him and others to the total exclusion of their own selves.

When Jesus tells us that we are to die to ourselves, I believe He is trying to tell us that we are to enter into a full surrender with Him so that He is fully free to guide our lives into the perfect will of God the Father.

When you enter into a true full surrender with the Lord of your entire life – you are putting to death all of your desires, all of your goals, and all of your wants as to how you should live this life. You are now turning the reigns of your life over to God the Father so He can start to fully lead you down the divine path that He has set up for your life.

***Dying to one's self does not mean that you try and totally wipe out or annihilate your personality with you who are in God. God wants to build you up in His grace, power, and knowledge. He does not want to try and destroy who you really are in Him. There are some sects in the Body that are still into self-mortification type practices such as self-flagellation.***

***It is just my own personal opinion that you do not have to engage in these types of extreme practices. You do not have to beat yourself into submission to God. All God is looking for is that you be willing to lay down your entire life for Him so that He can fully take over the reigns of your life and lead you into the perfect plan and destiny that He has set up for your life.***

The real answer in learning how to be able to love yourself in the way that God would really like is probably right in the middle of these two extremes. The Holy Spirit will always be there to help keep you in balance with the way you are loving and treating yourself. Just realize that you have to stay on top of this part of the game – always making sure that you do not start to get too full of yourself and start sliding down to the one extreme of becoming too narcissistic and self-centered.

But you also have to make sure you do not start sliding down to the other extreme – where you start to begin to totally forget about yourself and start becoming a doormat for anyone and everyone who will want to try and use you for your goodness and generosity. Once you start to slide down into this type of extreme realm, other people will see it, and they will then try to start taking advantage of you in any way they can.

With all of the physical and verbal abuse that goes on behind closed doors in many marriages and families throughout the entire world – many people have had all of their healthy levels of self-confidence and self-

esteem beat right out of them. They only do not love themselves anymore, they do not even like themselves anymore.

After hearing how no good they are, how stupid they are, how unworthy they are, and how they will never amount to anything worthwhile in this life – pretty soon they start believing in the lies of their enemy. And once they start believing in those lies, they will then start to lose all sense of healthy self-worth as to who they really are in the Lord.

***For those types of people who are living and operating in unacceptable low levels of self-confidence and self-esteem – the first thing God the Father will do with you once you enter into a full surrender with Him is to start to show you who you really are in Him and the real treasure and beauty that you really are in His eyes.***

***The Bible says that God the Father is no respecter of persons. What this means is that every single one of us is on an equal footing with God, and that He loves each and everyone of us equally and unconditionally – which also includes you!***

***The Holy Spirit will really help you out in this area if you are open to receiving His help. He will show you who you really are in Christ, that you are not a nobody, that you are a somebody – and that God loves you and cares for you just as much as He loves and cares for anyone else in this life.***

Really study and chew on the wording of the verses I will now list. The two key words in these verses are the words **“as yourself.”**

In other words, God wants you to love yourself to the same degree and with the same intensity as you would love anyone else. God is not excluding you from this equation – He is including you. This is why He is specifically using the words **“as yourself”** in each one of these verses. Here they are:

1. “This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it: **‘You shall love your neighbor AS YOURSELF.’** On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.”  
(*Matthew 22:38*)
2. For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even in this: **“You shall love your neighbor AS YOURSELF.”** (*Galatians 5:14*)
3. “You shall not take vengeance, nor bear any grudge against the children of your people, **but you shall love your neighbor AS YOURSELF:** I am the Lord.” (*Leviticus 19:18*)



I personally believe that you really cannot begin to love other people in the way that God would really like if you cannot learn how to first love yourself. This is why God is specifically using the words to love others as you would love yourself, with all of these words being in the same sentence.

For those of you who are having major problems in this area due to coming from abusive and dysfunctional pasts – there is one Bible teacher who really specializes in this part of the walk for believers. Her name is Joyce Meyer. Many of you already know who she is. For those of you who do not know her, it is just my own personal opinion that she is one of the best in dealing with the subject of being able to get inner healings from the Lord for those who have been severely abused in their past.

She uses herself as her own punching bag and tells about her own abusive past and how God brought her out of it and raised her up to be the woman He wanted her to become in Him. Her story is a perfect example of – if God did it for her, then He can do it for you, no matter how bad your past may have been.

She has many good books and teaching cassette tapes on this subject. You cannot go wrong with all of her teachings on this subject.

## 6. Loving Others

This will now lead us into the next section. God not only wants us to be able to love Him and love ourselves – but He now wants us to be able to love one another.

When God says that we are to love one another, that we are to love others, that we are to love our neighbor – I believe you can bottom-line these statements saying that God wants you to be able to love all of the members of your own family, your personal friends, your neighbors that live around you, and then any total strangers you may ever run across. In other words, God wants you to be able to love everyone across the board of your life.

Remember, this is the second greatest commandment next to loving God Himself. This is how important this commandment is in the eyes of God. Can you imagine what would happen to this world if everyone would really obey and walk out these two specific commandments?

Here are six key verses spelling all of this out loud and clear.

1. "You shall not hate your brother in your heart ... You shall not take vengeance, nor bear any grudge against the children of your people, **but you shall love your neighbor as yourself:** I am the

Lord." (*Leviticus 19:17*)

2. "A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another. By this all will know that you are My disciples, if you have love for one another." (*John 13:34*)
3. "This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you." (*John 15:12*)
4. **"Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another."** (*1 John 4:11*)
5. "Beloved, let us love one another, for love is God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. He who does not love does not know God, for God is love." (*1 John 4:7*)
6. "We know that we have passed from death to life, because we love the brethren. He who does not love his brother abides in death. Whoever hates his brother is a murderer, and you know that no murderer has eternal life abiding in him." (*1 John 3:14*)

The last two verses from 1 John are making some maximum intense statements. The first verse says that he who cannot love his brother does not truly know God. In other words, God will not know you if you cannot learn how to love other people in your walk with Him.

The very last verse then takes it one extreme step further when it says that he who cannot love his brother abides in death, and that he is actually considered a murderer in the eyes of God, and as a murderer, he does not have eternal life abiding in him. This is about as intense of a warning direct from God Himself that you can receive on this topic.

I believe the main reason God is really laying down the gauntlet on the way that He has worded these last two verses is because if we cannot learn how to love God and love other people in this life – then we will never be able to live in harmony and unity with others. And if we cannot live in harmony and unity with other people down here on this earth, then God will not want us living up in His heaven causing strife and discord among His other children.

This is why it is so important that each and every Christian work very closely with the Holy Spirit in this sanctification process – so that we can all learn how to love God, love ourselves, and love all other people in the way that He would really like for us to be able to do.

With our own natural love not being enough to really grow in this area due to our fallen and imperfect natures – we all have to learn how to rely

on the Holy Spirit so we can get Him to release His divine love into us and through us so we can begin to reach and touch others with that love.

## 7. Loving Your Enemies

Without any question, one of the hardest commands that the Lord has given us is that we have to learn how to love our enemies. And when He says our enemies, He is including the worst of our enemies.

How can you truly love someone who has raped you, who has severely abused you in your marriage, who has murdered someone in your family in cold-blood, or who has abducted and killed one of your children like what we see so much in the local news with pedophiles still being allowed to run rampant across this country?

It is one thing to be able to forgive this type of criminal, and then let him go into the hands of God for His vengeance, payback, and justice. But it is quite another thing to be able take a leap into this realm and actually try and love this person in the way that God would really like for us to love him.

So how can this realistically be done with some of the really bad and evil people who are still walking on this earth? I only have two possible answers for you on this issue.

**One** – we simply have to rely on the love of the Holy Spirit to be transmitted and imparted into us as one of His 9 fruits. I do not think most of us have this kind of love to give to someone who is simply pure evil with some of the horrible and barbaric crimes we have seen committed in recent years. You are simply going to have to learn how to ride and flow with the love of the Holy Spirit to be able to love these types of evil people in the way that the Lord would really like.

For most of us, our own natural love is not going to take us very far in this realm. This is why it is so important for each and every Christian to get this sanctification process started in their life – so God can begin to allow His Holy Spirit to release these 9 powerful fruits and qualities into the cores of our personalities.

**Second** – the only way you can even begin to try and do this with the worst of your enemies is that you have to attempt to see things from God's point of view and perspective. In other words, you are going to have to learn how to see your enemy through God's eyes and how He looks at them. And this is where it really gets deep and intense.

The most perfect example of someone truly loving His enemies in the way God the Father would really like is Jesus Christ Himself. After Jesus had

been beat to a pulp before His actual crucifixion, and then nailed to a cross to die a slow and torturous death over a 6 hour period – Jesus makes one of the most mind-blowing statements ever made on being able to love and forgive your enemies.

Before He dies, Jesus speaks out and tells His Father to forgive all of those who had just got done crucifying Him to that cross because they really did not know what they were doing!

Here is this most profound verse:

***Then Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they do." (Luke 23:34)***

This statement by Jesus is speaking volumes of revelation on just this one issue. You can tell by the words and tone of Jesus' statement, that He was really feeling the love of God for these people, even as they watched and jeered as He was dying on the cross.

***In other words, Jesus was still loving all of these people even after they had just got done committing the worse crime that the world has even seen or will ever see again – crucifying the living Christ!***

The Bible says that we are to think like Jesus and act like Jesus. We now have the mind of Christ as born-again believers. This means we are to imitate Jesus in our words, in our thoughts, and in our actions in our walk with the God the Father.

If you carefully study the actual wording in the above verse, you might be able to pick up some deeper revelation as to how Jesus could have possibly made this kind of extreme statement after He had already been nailed to the cross and was experiencing the most extreme pain imaginable. The clue might be in the words **"... for they do not know what they do."**

They obviously knew what they were doing by committing this horrible act against Jesus – but the angle Jesus might be seeing all of this from is they really did not know what they were doing in the big-picture, eternal scheme of things. If they really knew that there was a God and a devil, and a heaven and a hell, and that being cast into hell will be for all of eternity – some of them might have thought twice before engaging in such a horrible and evil act.

Some of God's prophets and seers who have been given actual visions of what hell is really like all have come back with some of the same information. Some of them were allowed to talk with people who were actually down there. And many of them have said that if they had only

known that there really was a hell, and that their evil and wicked lifestyles would have led them down there, that they would have never done what they did to get themselves thrown down in there.

If you look at all of the evil and wicked people in our world who have committed acts of pure, cold-blooded murder and who seem to have no real remorse for what they have done – they all know they will end up in jail if they ever get caught. Yet this still does not deter some of them from committing some of these evil and horrible acts.

But what they really don't know is if there is a hell or not – and whether or not they will get dropped down into it the minute they die and cross over.

***If they really knew what was waiting for them on the other side and how horrible of a place hell really is – some of them might have thought twice before committing some of their evil acts.***

This might have been what Jesus was referring to when He made the above statement in that they really did not know what they were doing – for if they did, and they knew it would get them thrown down into hell for all of eternity, they may have thought twice before actually doing it.

I do not know if this kind of deeper revelation will be enough for some of you to really be able to love an evil and vicious criminal who may have killed or hurt one of your own. This is a very deep area, and you will have to be led by the Holy Spirit to really be able to love an enemy who has viciously wronged either you or a close loved one.

But if you are able to step outside of your box for just a minute and see how this evil criminal fits into the big picture, and that he will go straight to hell if he does not get saved and get his sins forgiven before he dies – then maybe you will be able to see him in the same light that Jesus was seeing those who were crucifying Him – and love him with the love of God, just as Jesus was doing while He was hanging on that cross to die for all of us.

Maybe the love of God can flow into you because you will then see that some of these evil people really do not know what they are doing in the eternal scheme of things by choosing with their own free wills to commit some of their horrible and evil acts.

But nonetheless, God the Father would like all of us to be able to do this by the way that He has worded the following two Scripture verses. Here are the two main verses, with the words coming directly from Jesus Himself that we learn how to be able to do this:

- “But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? ... Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is perfect.” (*Matthew 5:44-48*)
- “But I say to you who hear: **Love your enemies, do good to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, and pray for those who spitefully use you.** To him who strikes you on the one cheek, offer the other also. And from him who takes away your cloak, do not withhold your tunic either. Give to everyone who asks of you. And from him who takes away your goods do not ask them back. And just as you want men to do to you, you also do to them likewise.
- *But if you love those who love you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners love those who love them. And if you do good to those who do good to you, what credit is that to you? For even sinners do the same. And if you lend to those from whom you hope to receive back, what credit is that to you? For even sinners lend to sinners to receive as much back. **But love your enemies, do good, and lend, hoping for nothing in return;** and your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Highest. For He is kind to the unthankful and evil. Therefore be merciful, just as your Father also is merciful.” (*Luke 6:27-36*)*

Notice in the last part of the second verse it says that God Himself is kind and merciful to the unthankful and the evil. This may be why Jesus is telling us to love our enemies – because He and His Father love everyone, including all evil sinners.

Jesus ends the first verse above telling us that we should all strive to be perfect like our Father in heaven is perfect. If God can love these evil and unthankful sinners, then He wants us to try and be able to do the same thing in our walk with Him.

## 8. Be Doers of the Word

Now that you know from the above Scripture verses that God is wanting you to love Him, love yourself, and love everyone else across the board of your life – including any enemies you may have – now God wants you to be able to show that love in your actions to others.

There are a ton of verses in the Bible about how God wants you to act towards others. I will leave you with a few good verses showing you the importance that we all learn how to be actual doers of the Word and not just hearers in reference to being able to show love to others in our words and actions.

1. **"But be doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving yourselves." (James 1:22)**
2. **"But whoever has this world's goods, and sees his brother in need, and shuts up his heart from him, how does the love of God abide in him? My little children, let us not love in word or in tongue, but in deed and in truth." (1 John 3:17)**
3. **"Love does no harm to a neighbor; therefore love is the fulfillment of the Law." (Romans 13:10)**
4. **"A friend loves at all times, and a brother is born for adversity." (Proverbs 17:17)**
5. **"By this we know love, because He laid down His life for us. And we also ought to lay down our lives for the brethren." (1 John 3:16)**
6. **"Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his friends." (John 15:13)**

All of these verses are perfectly showing us what true love can really do in our relations with others. Just as Jesus was willing to lay down His entire life for all of us in order that we be able to be brought back to Him and His Father – God and Jesus are wanting all of us to love others with that same kind of intensity and loyalty – even to the point of being willing to sacrifice our life to save someone else's life if that kind of need should ever arise.

## Conclusion

When you really study and meditate on all of the above verses one right after the other – the message is coming through loud and clear from God the Father. God has purposely made the quality of love the #1 quality that all born-again believers have to seek to get worked into their personalities.

***The quality of love operating in our lives is the only common thread that will bind all of us together with God and one another. Without the quality of love bonding and uniting all***

***of us together, there can never be any true peace and harmony between men and countries.***

The main reason there has been so much death, destruction, hate, and wars in our past, and currently in our present, is because man has never really learned how to love one another in the way that God had initially intended. And the sad part about this whole saga is that the Bible tells us exactly how it is all going to end up. Man is not going to learn from his past, and thus wars, murders, and evil acts will continue unabated until Jesus comes back to our earth to set up His 1000 year Millennium Kingdom.

And until that final and glorious event happens, each Christian will have to do the best they can to walk in the calls and divine assignments that the Lord has given to each one of us. The Bible says that Jesus will be coming back for a bride that will be without spot or blemish. This will be a sanctified bride.

Let God the Father start the process of getting you cleaned up and sanctified to the degree that He would really like to be able to do with you in this life. If you do, then you will be ready for [the rapture](#) if the rapture should occur in our lifetime. You will then be a part of the Bride that will be without spot or blemish – fully ready for our Lord's visible return.



## Letting Go of Your Past

Once you become saved and born again, the Bible tells us that we have now become new creations in Jesus Christ. Our slates have now been wiped fully clean, and we have now been given a brand new start in this life if we are willing to properly work with the Lord and allow Him to raise us up in His knowledge, grace, and power.

As I have stated numerous times in my other articles, the next step after you have been saved is to fully surrender your entire life into the hands of God the Father so that He is fully free to lead you into His perfect plan and destiny for your life. You must now be willing to make Jesus Lord over your life, not just your Savior. You must now become both saved and surrendered if you want to get anywhere in your new life with the Lord.

Making Jesus Lord over your life means that you are now willing turn the reigns of your life over to Him, and He will now lead your life into the specific directions He will want it to go in. You are now no longer your own. You have been bought back by God the Father at the price of His Son's shed blood. You now belong to God and Jesus and no one else in this life – which includes yourself, your family, and your best friends!

Once you enter into this full surrender with the Lord, one of the first things God may do with many of you is to take you back in your past so He can begin to clean up any wreckage that may have occurred. Before you can really move forward into the divine destiny that God has in store for you in this life, you first may have to deal with some specific things that may have occurred in your past.

***The reason for this is because too many Christians are bound up in their past – and as a result, they cannot fully live in their present.***

***Before you can really start to move forward in your divine destiny with the Lord – you will first have to learn how to let your past fully go.***

Jesus Christ and the apostle Paul make two very profound and life-altering statements in the two verses I will give you in this article. For many, these two specific verses will determine whether or not you will be able to fully succeed in the divine call that God has placed on your life.

As a result of the curse of Adam and Eve that is still in full operation on this earth, we are all forced to be born into a fallen and cursed world. We are all stuck having to deal with the reality of pure evil in our lives

through the activity of demonic spirits and bad and evil people who have chosen with their own free wills to live this life out on the dark side. As a result, every single one of us will get hurt to some degree and to some extent in this life. There is no getting around it. And for many, some of these hurts will end up being extreme and traumatic.

Every minute of every day someone is getting murdered, robbed, raped, abused, or abducted. We literally cannot go one day without some kind of this activity being reported on our local news channels. Jesus Himself said that a certain amount of tribulation and persecution would always come our way in this life. This is why the Bible tells us that we have to learn how to become good soldiers of Jesus Christ and learn how to put on and apply the real armor of God for our lives.

We have all been born into a war zone as a result of the curse of Adam and Eve – and unless you learn how to walk in the power and anointing of God for your life – some of these torpedo shots may knock you right out of your divine call in the Lord, if not possibly knock you right out of this life for good through an actual early physical death.

All of us to some degree have issues from our past that have to be properly dealt with before we can really proceed to walk into the perfect plan of God for our lives. Some Christians are so bound up with some of the things that has happened to them in their past – that they literally cannot get off the couch to start living again, much less ever fully fly into their divine destinies for the Lord.

Many of God's eagles have had their wings totally broken and decimated with some of the torpedo shots they have taken. Many of them are living on anti-depressants and pain killers because they can no longer handle the stress, pain, and heartache of this life.

**Before an eagle of God can really start to fly into the heights that God has in store for them in this life – that eagle has got to break off any chains that may be holding them back. These chains are keeping some of God's eagles grounded. And for many of God's eagles – some of these chains are things they are still holding onto from their past.**

**Jesus has said that He has come to set the captives free – and one of the main areas that we all have to be set free from is some of our wrong thinking that may have arisen out of some of the bad things that may have occurred in our past.**

As you will see in the two verses I will list below, Jesus and the apostle Paul are telling us that we have to learn how to let go of our past. Jesus

says that anyone who is trying to move forward in his walk and call for God – but keeps looking back – is not fit for the kingdom of God.

Paul says that the one thing he makes sure to do in his walk with the Lord is to forget those things which are behind him and press forward into those things which now lie ahead of him. Once you put these two verses together, one right next to the other, you get perfect revelation from the Lord on this issue.

***Bottom line – you have to learn how to let fully go of your past before you can start to proceed full steam ahead in your divine destiny for the Lord. If you do not learn how to let your past fully go – you will stay stuck and grounded right where you are at, and you will never fully accomplish everything that God would've had in store for you in this life.***

***And that will be an eternal regret that you will carry with you once you enter into heaven and the Lord shows you how much more you could have accomplished for Him in this life had you allowed Him to unchain you from your hurtful past. The choice is yours.***

***You can either choose to stay fully bound up in your past, continue to throw pity parties and blame everyone and everything for your miseries – or you can choose to rise up and make a brand new fresh start with the Lord by choosing to fully surrender your entire life into His hands – and then work with Him to get your past fully cleaned up so that you can then start to fully live in the present again, and then fly into the divine destiny that He has already planned out for your life.***

For many of you who are severely bound up with things that may have occurred in your past – realize that God will give you an ample and reasonable amount of time to get your past cleaned up.

Many of you will need an inner healing from the Lord on certain issues. Though the two verses I will list below state that God wants you to let go of your past so you can fully fly into what He has in store for you in this life – God will not expect some of you to make this kind of quantum leap overnight, especially if some of your past hurts have been extreme and traumatic.

One of the things I have found out in my own personal journey with the Lord is what happens after you initially enter into this full surrender with Him. What God will do with you is take you back in your memory lane and bring back up to your remembrance many things that have occurred in your past.

The reason He will do this is so you can learn from your past. He will show you where He was at and where He was not at on certain things. He will show you some of the good things you did and some of the bad things you did so you can learn from those past mistakes and not repeat them in the future.

He will show you how He has been behind the scenes the entire time, and how He eventually ended up working out some of the bad things for His and your own good with the way some of these things ended up working out.

He will show you the extreme consequences of not fully following Him in this life, and that some of the bad things that may have happened to you were as a result of you making your own decisions without consulting Him first – not being aware of the dangers that were around that corner you were getting ready to turn into.

When God does begin to do this kind of deeper inner work with you – go with Him on it. Let Him show you the truth on many of the different matters of your past. If you do, then His truth will start to work to help set you free – no matter how bad some of the things may have been in your past.

***God can fully heal you and break off any past chain if you are willing to believe that He can do it for you.***

Some of God's people are bound up with false chains of guilt as a result of some of the sexual molestations that may have occurred in their dysfunctional families. God can fully break these types of chains off you, no matter how bad or how severe you think they may be.

***The Holy Spirit is the Master Surgeon. He is the One who will be getting down deep into where these hurts and pains are located. If you are willing to work and cooperate with Him during this inner healing process, He will be able to cut out and completely take away most, if not all of the hurt, pain, and trauma associated with some of these painful events.***

I will end this article with some of the specific areas the Lord will target once you open up to Him to get your past cleaned up so you can start to fully live again in your present.

***But here is the point you will really need to grab a hold of off the wording of these two Scripture verses. God will take you back in your past for a reasonable length of time so you can directly deal with certain issues and problem areas He will want to target. But after that time and season has past – you will then need to let your past fully go and concentrate and***

**focus on the present and future as to where God will now be taking you.**

**There will simply come a day and time that you will have to let your past and all of the hurts from your past completely go. If you don't – you will stay stuck, grounded, and paralyzed in your walk with the Lord. You will never be able to fly off the edge of that cliff into the freedom and adventure that God has in store for you in this life unless you first learn how to let your past fully go.**

**This principle is a basic 101 principle that each and every single Christian has got to get worked into their mindsets. This basic principle could be one of the major determining factors as to whether or not you ever fly off that cliff into the divine path that God has set up for you to follow in this life.**

**Many of God's eagles never learn to fly with the wings that He has given them because they could not get unbound from the chains of their hurtful past. As a result, many of God's eagles will lose their one and only chance to leave their mark in this world in the divine destiny that He has set up for their lives. I believe this is why the Bible says that many are called, but few are chosen.**

**Many of God's people are being called to come up into His higher calling for their lives – but many of them are not being chosen because they simply could not let go of their hurtful past.**

The choice to learn how to let your past fully go so you can start to fully live again in your present is an individual choice for each believer. Not even God Himself will override your free will in this area. All God can do is give you the knowledge from His Word that this is what He really wants from you, with all of it being for your own good. And then God will take you back in your past for a reasonable amount of time so you can get all of your loose ends cleaned up and tied up.

**But after that time is up, God will then expect you to make a very important decision for your life. Will you now let your past fully go so you can fly into the divine destiny that He has set up for your life – or will you choose to stay stuck and grounded, wailing in the misery of your past?**

Each Christian will have to make this choice for themselves. This is why the Bible says that we are transformed by the renewing of our minds. You have to learn how to develop right thinking in your thought process with

how you think about and view things. And one of the first basic things you will need to learn to think right about is how to fully let go of your past.

***Learn how to let fully go of your past with the help of the Holy Spirit – and then you can step from the dugout out onto the real playing field where the real action is really at with the Lord!***

Now I will go to the two Scripture verses that will give us this powerful and life-changing revelation.

## The Scripture Verses

1. This first verse is coming directly from Jesus Himself. Here is what He has to say about this basic principle:

***But Jesus said to him, "No one, having put his hand to the plow, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God." (Luke 9:62)***

Notice Jesus says that **"no one"** who keeps looking back on his past is fit for His kingdom. The words **"no one"** is an all-inclusive word. It means all of us – no exceptions.

In other words, Jesus is wanting all of us to get a grip on this revelation and get it properly worked into our mindsets so we can all plow straight ahead into the calls and divine destinies that He has in store for us in this life.

2. The second verse is coming from the apostle Paul. Paul really puts this revelation in proper perspective in relation to the big picture. Here is how he puts it:

**"Not that I have already attained, or am already perfected; but I press on, that I may lay hold of that for which Christ Jesus has also laid hold of me. Brethren, I do not count myself to have apprehended; **but one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forward to those things which are ahead. I press toward the goal for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.**" (Philippians 3:12)**

Notice Paul starts out the second part of this verse with the words **"but one thing I do."** And then from there he goes into the revelation of not looking at what is behind him, but looking and reaching forward for those things which now lie ahead of him. The words **"but one thing I do"** is being put in the context of something that he is really making sure that he does on a regular and consistent basis.

This particular revelation is one that you will really have to stay on top of and not let get away from you. It's very easy to start falling back on all of the bad things that may have occurred in your past, and then use that as an excuse to start feeling sorry for yourself, or to justify some of the irrational things you may be doing.

Just because your parents may have physically abused you does not give you the right to physically abuse your own children. Just because one of your dysfunctional parents may have been an alcoholic does not mean you have to become an alcoholic yourself.

Then notice Paul ends this verse really putting everything in proper perspective when he says that what he is wanting to press forward on is the **"upward call of God."** God the Father has a specific plan and destiny for each person who will come to Him and fully surrender their entire lives into His hands. But you will never be able to press forward and fly into this upward and high calling unless you first learn how to let go of your past.

Both of these verses perfectly and beautifully capture this basic 101 principle. This particular principle is, without any question, a major, basic, fundamental principle that each and every Christian has to get worked into their mindset and way of thinking in this life. For many, it will be the difference as to whether or not they fully accomplish everything that God has set out for them to do in His perfect plan for their lives.

## Conclusion

All of us have a certain amount of baggage that we carry from our past. Some of us carry lighter loads than others. Some have learned how to let go of their past because they have found out that it will seriously damage their walk with the Lord and what He wants to do with their lives.

They have found that carrying around some of the baggage from their past and constantly dwelling on it will steal their joy and happiness in the Lord. They have found that it will distort and warp their thinking. These kinds of people have managed to break away from their past so they can fully live and operate in the call of God for their lives.

But many other people have not managed to break free from their past. They are still mired down in the hurts and injustices of their past and cannot seem to get any victory over any of it – either in their thinking or in their emotions.

**1.** For those of you who are still stuck in your past to some degree – ask God to help you out with all of this. If you are willing to enter into a full surrender with Him, then He will start to move and help break you free

from your hurtful past. Work with the Holy Spirit once He starts to show you the specific areas from your past that He will want to target.

Here are some specific areas from your past that you can expect the Holy Spirit to move in on very strongly if any of these are in your past and background.

- **Broken marriages**
- **Sexual abuse of any kind**
- **Physical abuse**
- **Extreme verbal abuse**
- **Being a victim of any kind of crime**
- **Dysfunctional families**
- **Death of a close loved one**
- **Any type of financial disaster**

All of these are serious torpedo shots that can knock many of us straight to the ground, especially if some of this has occurred when you were at a young age.

When dealing with people who have been seriously hurt or injured like what you see with victims of any kind of crime or sexual or physical abuse – the first thing God will ask you to do is to fully forgive the person who has wronged or injured you, no matter how bad and how vicious that wrong may have been.

We have another article in our site in the Psychological Issues page on dealing specifically with the hurts you may have suffered at the hands of someone else. The title of this article is "How to Handle Negative Feelings When Wronged by Someone Else."

Before God can move to supernaturally heal you from the pain, torment, and wounds that were inflicted upon you in your past – you will first have to be willing to fully forgive this person and let that person go into the hands of God for His vengeance, justice, and payback. God will be righting all of the wrongs ever done to you in this life when everything is all finally said and done. This is why you can let the worst of your enemies go into the hands of God.

If you are willing to truly forgive this person, then God will move in – and through the power of the Holy Spirit, heal up those wounds so you can no longer feel them. God will not take away the actual memory of the event, but He can take away the actual pain, trauma, and torment associated with the event so you can then get on with the rest of your life and not have to keep thinking about it all of the time.

For those of you who have been severely affected over the death of a close loved one – we have another article in our site titled, "A Powerful



Word for Those Who Have Lost Loved Ones,” in the Psychological Issues section.

In this article, a young couple who were faithfully serving God lost their daughter at a very young age. As a result of her early death, neither one of them could get over it, and it then started to hinder their walk with God and what He was wanting to do with their lives. They finally received a very liberating word from the Holy Spirit that finally set them free so they could start living again in their present.

For those of you who have been severely hurt and wounded in a marriage as a result of infidelity or abuse in the marriage – realize that God can fully heal your mind, your emotions, and your heart on the inside so you can start to fully function once again in the real world and get on with what He has in store for you in your future.

Many marriages have ended up in divorce as a result of a person choosing to marry who they thought was best suited for them instead of asking God for His direct opinion on the matter. Next time, make sure you let God lead you to the mate of His choice – not your choice! You have no idea how some people can change for the worse in your future – but God can – and that is why you have to rely on His knowledge and wisdom as to who you should be marrying in this life.

For those who have been brought up in very dysfunctional families – realize that God, His Word, and His truth can set you free from some of the warped and distorted thinking that may have occurred in your dysfunctional family. God can show you the errors of their thinking and the errors of their ways so that it does not contaminate you with what He wants to do with your life.

The Bible says the truth will set you free. God will make sure to get the appropriate truths revealed to you so you can fully understand some of the dysfunctional behavior that was occurring in your family, and help separate truth from error so you do not fall victim to the same type of distorted and warped thinking in your own adult life.

**2.** When God wants us to learn how to let the past fully go, I believe He is targeting more of the bad things in our past – especially the things that will really play with our minds and emotions where our hearts can start to harden up, and our thinking can start to become distorted, warped, and unhealthy.

We all have many good things from our past. We all have a certain amount of treasured memories that we will never forget. God wants us to keep all of these good memories fully intact. There is no harm in going back down memory lane from time to time with many of the good things that may have occurred in our past.

***Our past is a part of who we are and who we have become in the Lord. Even some of the bad things in our past have been used by God to shape, mold, and transform us into the kind of person He wants us to become in Him.***

What I believe Jesus and Paul are trying to tell us in the above two verses is that we cannot allow some of the bad things that may have happened in our past affect our thinking and our ability to want to live with full intensity for the Lord.

***You only get one chance in the eternal scheme of things to leave your mark in this world to some degree for the Lord. God has a specific plan and purpose for your life.***

***He has a list of divine assignments that He wants you to complete for Him before you go home to be with Him for all of eternity. Do not let a few bad apples and a few bad events – no matter how bad they may have been – stop and prevent you from becoming everything that God is calling you to become in Him.***

Jesus says in the Book of Revelation that those who are overcomers in this life will be the ones to rule the nations of the world with Him. You can overcome any of the bad people and any of the bad events from your past with the divine help of the Holy Spirit. God's supernatural help can pull you out of any of the bad and negative emotions that may be preventing you from entering into His perfect plan for your life.

***But like Peter and his story of getting out of the boat to supernaturally walk on water – you will have to be willing to step out of the boat, grab a hold of God's hand, and work with the Holy Spirit to help get you cleaned up so you can fully and finally let your past go.***

***Once you are able to let your past fully go – then you will be ready to fly as a true eagle of God into the divine plan that He has set up for you and your life.***

***The choice is yours. You can either choose to let the hurts, wounds, and pains from your past continue to strangle and paralyze you – or you can choose to say enough is enough and give God a chance and a green light to free you from some of the bad things that may have occurred in your past. His power and His help is right there for you if you are willing to take His hand and allow Him to bring you up out of it!***

## Be Anxious For Nothing

This article will follow the last one I just did under the Sanctification Section titled, "Letting Go of Your Past." In that article, I showed you the extreme importance that each Christian learn how to fully let go of their past if any part of their past is affecting their ability to walk and fly into the call of God for their life.

As Jesus and the apostle Paul said in the two Scripture verses that I gave you in that article – no one who keeps looking back and dwelling on their past is fit for the kingdom of God. Paul says that we have to forget those things which are now behind us and move on and press forward into those things which now lie ahead of us.

As I stated in that article, God will give each person a reasonable amount of time to clean up some of the loose ends from their past. He will give you a reasonable amount of time to get an inner [healing](#) from Him on all of the hurts and pains that you have may have experienced from certain situations or from other people. God will show you the truth on many of the different matters from your past so His truth can start to work to set you free from any chains that may be still holding you captive to your past.

But once God has sufficiently dealt with everything from your past that He wants to deal with – then you will need to turn around, let your past go, and start to walk and fly into the divine destiny that He has set up for you to follow in this life. In other words – you will have to get back living again in your present, and start walking forward into the new life that God now has set out before you.

Once this has occurred, you will now be ready to start to work very closely with the Holy Spirit as you start to move forward into your divine destiny for the Lord. The Holy Spirit will now let you know what specific qualities He will want to try and work into your mind and personality.

This article, and the additional articles to follow in this Sanctification Section, will let you know some of the the basic qualities that you will need to get worked into your mindset and how you think about things.

As I said in my article, "You Are What You Think" – what you think about and dwell on in this life will make or break you in this sanctification realm with the Lord. You simply have got to learn what kinds of things you are to think about and focus on in order to really be able to fly as a powerful and anointed eagle of God.

In this article, I will give you a very profound revelation that God the Father would like to get worked into your mindset and way of thinking. This revelation is once again coming from Jesus and the apostle Paul. In the three Scripture verses I will give you in this article, Jesus is telling us that we are to do the following with Him:

- **Be anxious for nothing**
- **That we are not to have an anxious mind**
- **That we are not to worry about our lives and what will happen tomorrow**

I remember when I first saw these verses, I wondered how anyone could learn to be anxious for nothing with all of the bad things that could hit anyone of us at anytime. How can you be anxious for nothing when:

- You have just lost your job and you will now have to find another one
- You have just come out of a messy and painful divorce and you will now have to **start all over again**
- Your spouse has just been diagnosed with **terminal cancer** and they only have 6 more months to live
- You have just caught your spouse cheating on you
- You just found out that your son or daughter has become highly addicted to crack cocaine or meth
- You have just become the **victim** of a crime such as a rape, robbery, or an assault

I could go on and on with all of the adverse things that could hit anyone of us at anytime with the full force of a hurricane. As a result of the curse of Adam and Eve that is still in full operation on this earth, we are all stuck with having to battle various types of storm clouds from time to time. And for some, these storm clouds will be downright vicious, nasty, and traumatic. Every minute of everyday someone is getting knocked straight to the ground with a vicious torpedo shot.

How can anyone learn to be anxious for nothing in the way Jesus would really like from us in the sea of uncertainty that we are all forced to live and swim in – never knowing what is going to happen to us two minutes from now, much less what is going to happen tomorrow or in the days following?

I will first start out by giving you the three verses from Scripture where Jesus is telling us that this is something that He would really like all of us

to learn how to do. I will then end this article with some comments on how we can possibly learn how to get this type of right thinking worked into our mindset and way of thinking – even if we are forced to have to deal with a major storm cloud.

## 1. Be Anxious For Nothing

This first verse from the apostle Paul really sets the stage on this specific piece of revelation. Here it is:

**“Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known to God; and the peace of God, which surpasses all understanding, will guard your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.” (Philippians 4:6)**

Paul gives us a major revelation in this verse with how we can be anxious for nothing with the words that come right after he initially makes this statement. Notice he says that we are to make all of our requests known to God in prayer – and if we do, then the peace of God can enter into us to guard our hearts and minds through Jesus.

***In other words, if you have been hit by a severe storm cloud – go to God the Father in prayer and tell Him exactly what you will need to handle the problem. If you do, then God will hear your prayer loud and clear, and He will then move to help you handle the storm cloud.***

***Once you know that God is now on the job to help you take care of this severe storm cloud – then the peace of God will start to flow into your thinking and emotions because you know that God will now help you solve the problem or crisis you are now facing.***

This is why Paul is using the words that the **“peace of God, which surpasses all understanding”** will now enter into you to guard your heart and mind from getting all worked up and out of control.

Once you go to God the Father in prayer to ask for His help to handle a serious problem or situation, then His peace will be able to start to flow into you. And once His peace starts to flow into you, then you will feel His peace starting to calm you down – even right in the middle of the worse kind of storm cloud you could imagine yourself falling into.

I have heard testimony after testimony of people who have fallen into the worse kinds of storm clouds you could possibly imagine – and then all of sudden they would feel the peace of God come into them after they had

prayed and committed the problem into the hands of God. They had no idea how long it would take for God to resolve the problem. They had no idea as to how God was going to handle the problem. All they knew was that God had heard their prayer and that He would now handle the problem for them.

Once this fact was really grabbed by their minds and their spirits, then the peace of God was able to enter into them. And once the peace of God entered into them, then they were able to calm down and be anxious for nothing – exactly like what this verse is telling us to learn how to do.

***This verse is telling us that the peace of God will actually "guard" our hearts and our minds. To guard means to protect. What this means is that the peace of God can help you be anxious for nothing.***

***Once you feel the peace of God come into your mind, into your thinking, and into your emotions – then you won't be able to help but feel anxious for nothing – even right in the middle of a severe storm cloud.***

So in one powerful and profound verse, God is telling us to be anxious for nothing – but at the same time He is telling us exactly how to be able to do this – and that is by going to Him in prayer and telling Him exactly what you will need to handle the problem, and then fully commit and surrender the problem into His hands for His direct handling.

Once you have fully surrendered the entire problem into God's hands, then He will release His peace into your mind and emotions so He can calm you down and help you to be anxious for nothing.

## **2. Do Not Have An Anxious Mind**

This next verse will perfectly connect to the above verse from Paul. This next verse is coming direct from Jesus Himself. Here is what He has to say about learning how to remain more calm in how we look at things in this life.

***"And do not seek what you should eat or what you should drink, nor have an anxious mind. For all these things the nations of the world seek after, and your Father knows that you need these things. But seek the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added to you." (Luke 12:29)***

This verse is a major power verse! This verse really puts everything into proper perspective in how we should view this life, and what we should all be striving for and seeking after in this life.

Notice that Jesus is specifically telling us that we are not to be anxious about the basic necessities of our life. Without food or water, we will literally die. Our bodies cannot go very long without proper nourishment. Yet Jesus is telling us not to worry about these basic things.

The key words in this verse is the last sentence where Jesus tells us to concentrate and focus on seeking after the kingdom of God. If we do, then God the Father will make sure to add all of the basic things that we will need to survive and live in this world.

***Seeking after the Kingdom of God means that you are to seek directly after God Himself in order to establish a good personal relationship with Him – and then seek after His perfect plan and destiny for your life.***

***If you make God #1 in your life by seeking after Him and His perfect plan and destiny for your life – then God will make sure that you have every little thing you will need to perfectly walk out your call for Him.***

In this divine support that you will be getting from the Lord will be all of the money that you will ever need to accomplish His perfect will for your life, all of the good friends you will need, all of the favor you will need so that certain doors and opportunities can open up for you to take you to the next step, and the spouse you will need to walk and share the journey with if it will be in His perfect will that you get married in this life.

This verse from Jesus should be burned into every believer's memory bank – as it perfectly sets the stage as to what is most important in this life and shows us exactly what we should be striving for and seeking after. This verse shows us that our top priority has to be with God and with what He wants to do with our lives. If we make the Lord and His perfect will for our life our top priority and goal in this life, then God will give us everything else we will ever need to be able to live and work for Him in this life.

***Notice Jesus says that "all" these things will be added to us if we seek after His kingdom as our #1 priority.***

The word "all" is a maximum intense word. The word "all" means that God will give us everything we will need to live and work for Him – not just some or part of what we will need!

Many Christians are not getting some of their basic needs met because they are in direct violation of this basic spiritual truth. God is not #1 in their life. They are not seeking after God to get to know Him better. They have not entered into a true personal relationship with Him. They have

not fully surrendered their entire lives into His hands so that He can place them into His perfect plan and destiny for their lives.

Notice Jesus starts the last sentence out with the word **“but.”** **But** first seek the kingdom of God – and **then** all of the basic things you will need in this life will be given to you.

Once you fully understand this basic truth and get it properly implemented into your life – then you will no longer have an anxious mind, since you will know that God has your life fully and soundly in the palms of His hands and that He will now be working everything out for His and your own good.

### 3. Do Not Worry About Your Life

This last verse will perfectly wrap up what the above two verses are trying to tell you. If you no longer have need of having an anxious mind because you are now seeking after God and His perfect will for your life, then this means you can now take the last and final step – and that is not to worry about your life and the direction it is now going since God is now in total control of your life.

God is now the Captain of your ship. God is now at the helm of your ship, and He will now be the One to direct your life in the direction that He will want it to go in. Once you fully grasp this revelation, then you will no longer need to worry about your life and have an anxious mind – because you know now that God has everything in good stead with how He will be working and handling your life.

The burden and stress of trying to figure everything out has now been taken off your back. God will now be leading you into the specific jobs He will want you to have in this life. He will now be leading you to the spouse He will want you to marry if it is in His perfect will that you marry in this life. He will now lead you to the friends that He will want you to have in this life.

Too many Christians are still trying to work out all of the above issues out of their own flesh and intelligence. As a result, they end up marrying the wrong people, end up taking the wrong jobs, and end up hooking up with the wrong friends.

By the time they reach mid-life, their house of cards all of a sudden comes crashing down on them. Their marriages end up in divorce, and they either lose their jobs, or they feel totally unfulfilled in the jobs they are now working in. They then end up realizing they should have followed God’s divine plan for their lives rather than following their own dreams and aspirations.



If you will follow God and His perfect plan for your life – then much, if not all of the stress, anxiety, and burden can be lifted from your life. As a result, you can then learn how to be anxious for nothing and learn how to relax and enjoy this life with much more vigor and vitality in the way that God would really like.

Study this next verse very carefully. This verse is loaded with major revelation.

***"Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing?"***

***Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.***

***Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Therefore do not worry, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things.***

***But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you. Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble."***  
***(Matthew 6:25-34)***

Jesus could not have put it more perfectly than by the way He has worded this longer verse. He gives 3 major analogies with the birds, the grass, and the lilies of the fields. All three of these are being perfectly held up and supported by God the Father. And if God the Father is upholding and keeping these three perfectly alive, then He will do the same for each and everyone of us since we are obviously of much more value to Him than they are.

If you can really grab a hold of this revelation and get it worked into your mindset and way of thinking, then you can achieve what the last part of this verse is trying to tell you to do – and that is to not worry about your

life and what tomorrow may bring because you know that God now has every little detail of your life held perfectly in His hands.

## Conclusion

When you put all three of the above verses right next to one another – you are receiving a major revelation from God the Father. This revelation is that it is possible to learn how to be anxious for nothing and how not to be overly worrying about anything and everything in this life.

When it comes right down to it, you have very little control over much of what happens in your life. You cannot control the weather, other people, and the outcome of certain events. When you get right down to it, you have little or no control over most of what happens in your life since you do not know what is going to happen to you in the next two minutes, much less what is going to happen to you in the next day or two.

***This leaves you with either one of two choices. You can either learn how to fully trust God with every aspect of your life and learn how to be anxious for nothing because you know everything is totally in His hands down to the very smallest detail of your life – or you can choose to worry about anything and everything driving you and everyone else around you crazy.***

As I have said in some of my other articles, we all have to go through various trials and tribulations in this life as the result of the curse of Adam and Eve that is still in full operation on this earth. And until Jesus comes back to set up His Millennium Kingdom, we are all going to have to put up with certain amount of evil from demons and bad and evil people who will choose to live this life on the dark side.

So how can we really be anxious for nothing when hit by one of these heavier storm clouds as mentioned at the top of this article?

The apostle Paul gives us the answer in the first verse I mentioned above. No matter how bad and severe this storm cloud may be – God, through the power of prayer, can still bring healing, deliverance, or a solution to any problem or crisis, no matter how hopeless the situation may look to you in the natural.

If you have just lost your job, God can lead you to the next new job He will want you to have, and this next new job may end up being better than the one you have just lost. If you have just gone through a messy and painful divorce and you feel like your life has been totally ruined and you have no where else to go – God can now take over, bring you up out of it, and give you a whole new life with a brand new fresh start.

If you have found that one of your children has become addicted to one of the more heavier drugs – you can go into the gap with the Lord and pray that He move to reach and bring your child out of that addiction. If you have been the victim of some type of crime, God can give you the grace and the ability to be able to forgive those who have wronged you, and then help you sort out and clean up whatever may have occurred as a result of the crime.

***The only possible way you can learn how to be anxious for nothing in this life is to learn how to totally trust God with every aspect of your life – and then totally trust Him to help you handle any type of storm cloud that may come your way, no matter how big or how severe that storm cloud may be. The Bible says that with God nothing is impossible.***

***If you can learn how to fully trust God with every aspect and detail of your life – then the Holy Spirit will start to release His fruit of peace as one of His 9 fruits right into the middle of your personality.***

***And once God starts to release His divine peace up into your mind and emotions through the Holy Spirit – then you can learn how to be anxious for nothing, and not let all of the stress and worry of this life eat you up alive and steal all of the joy and peace that you have in the Lord.***

For many, this basic revelation of learning how to be anxious for nothing is a real tough one to learn how to get worked into your mind and emotions in the type of world we live in today.

We live in a very fast-paced, high stress, dog-eat-dog type of world. And unless you have your personal faith and trust levels built up in the Lord to some type of appreciable degree, you will initially have a hard time getting this particular piece of revelation worked into your mind and emotions.

***But if you stick with the Lord and continue to grow and mature in His grace, knowledge, and power – then you will start to get to a point where your faith and trust levels will start to build up in Him. And once your personal faith and trust levels in the Lord start to really grow and build up – then you will find yourself starting to relax more in the Lord.***

***And once you are able to relax more in the Lord – then the peace of the Holy Spirit will start to enter into your mind and emotions. And once His peace starts to flood up into your mind and emotions, then you can learn how to be anxious for nothing in the way that Jesus would really like.***

Again, this is all part of the sanctification process that God would like to get started with each and everyone of us. And part of this sanctification process will be to get right thinking imparted into your mind. If you can learn how to get this basic revelation worked into your mind, will, and emotions – it will just make your life that much more fun, pleasant, and peaceful in the Lord.

## Godliness With Contentment is Great Gain

Once again, the apostle Paul comes in with a very powerful revelation that really has application for everyone in this day and age. This is another good mental principle that each Christian should seek to get worked into their mindsets and way of thinking in this life.

For those of you who live outside of the United States, my brother Chris and I live in the United States. We feel that our country is the most blessed country in this world as a result of our country being founded on the principles of true Christianity. Though we still have many problems with some of the things that are going on in our country, we still feel that God's hand is on this country and will continue to stay on it until the gospel has been preached to the rest of the world and the Rapture has occurred.

As a result of being the most blessed country in the world, many in our country have fallen prey to the spirit of greed and materialism. I am afraid with all of the material blessings bestowed upon our country by our Father, some of His children have become spoiled in the luxuries of this life, and now many of His own love the world more than they love Him.

Money, power, and material wealth has ruined many lives, not only in our country, but throughout the rest of the world as well. The Bible tells us that it is not the money itself that will corrupt and ruin a person and his life, it is the love and abnormal pursuit of that money that will ruin a person and his life.

There is no question that any significant amount of money that may fall into your hands is an incredible initial high. Once any kind of significant money falls into your hands, the first thing that will come into your mind is what you can buy with all of this money. Your mind will go nuts with all of the material things you think you may really need and will want to buy with this money. Many people who have won big jackpots in some of our bigger lotteries have gone completely broke within 4-5 years. Millions of dollars were completely wasted on foolish purchases and unwise investments.

People have killed one another over money. Many people have lost their marriages and their good relationships with their friends and other family members over disputes over money and how to properly handle it. Money will change some people's personalities for the worse, making them forget where they have initially come from and who their real friends are in this life. Hollywood is littered with the casualties of what fame, money, and

power can do to someone if that amount of money and fame is not properly handled.

Once again, the Word of God comes to our rescue as to how we should be looking at money and the material things of this life. God the Father has made sure that He put in the appropriate verses in His Word that will show us how we are to look at money and the material blessings that we can receive from Him in this life.

God loves to bless His children with some of these types of material blessings – but what each Christian has to do is to keep all of this in proper perspective with the big picture, and not let any of these material blessings draw us away from God and with what He wants to do with our lives.

Many pastors and churches have been ruined with the sudden influx of money and then the improper management of that money. Everyone always starts out with the best of intentions, but somewhere along the line people just get stupid and out of control with large sums of money.

Other churches have developed an unhealthy fear of losing whatever money they already have flowing through their churches.

***I believe that some of these churches have gone too far to the seeker-sensitive side in their sermons and messages for fear of losing money from some of the flock they might offend if they preach all sides of God's Word.***

***The fear of losing money is driving them as to what they should preach about on Sundays instead of being guided and led by the Holy Spirit as to what they should be preaching about. As a result, some of our churches are out of balance with some of their teachings, and they are withholding some very valuable knowledge their flocks are needing to hear from God's Word.***

***If God is calling you and anointing you to build and pastor a church – then trust and have faith in God that He will keep you properly funded and supported. Do not let the fear of man and the fear of losing money from your flock keep you from preaching and teaching what God wants you to preach about on a weekly basis.***

***If God cannot properly support you in the running of your church – then there is something wrong with your situation and you need to get with God to find out exactly what some of the problems and barriers are that is preventing you from receiving the right amount of money to help keep you afloat.***

Per the article I just did titled, "Be Anxious For Nothing" – I listed a verse in this article that tells us that we are to first seek after the kingdom of God – and if we do, then everything else that we will need to survive and function in this world will be given to us by God the Father.

However, once God does start to release some of these material blessings into your life, you will really have to work to stay on top of this part of your game with Him and not let any of this money, wealth, and material possessions go to your head and start to pull you away from Him and what He wants to do with your life.

You always have to remember where all of this money is coming from in the first place. All of this money is coming directly from God. It is not coming from yourself or from the world in general, even though the rest of the world will try and tell you otherwise. Stay humble with whatever blessings God will bestow upon you as a result of the good works that you have already done for Him to-date.

Once you really enter into a full surrender with the Lord where you are now seeking Him and His perfect will for your life, then sooner or later some of the money and material blessings from God will start to be released into your life. And once this starts to happen, you are really going to have to ground on the types of verses I will list in this article.

The apostle Paul once more very beautifully puts everything in proper perspective in the way that he has worded several of the verses in this article. In the verses I will list below, he says that:

- **Godliness with contentment is great gain**
- **To be content in whatever state you may be in**
- **To be content with the things you already have**

For many in our money-hungry society, these particular qualities are not operating in their lives and mindsets. They cannot be content with the things they already have because they cannot stop thinking of what they are going to buy next. No matter what they buy or how much they buy, it never seems to satisfy or fulfill them – so they are always on the lookout for that next new toy or investment.

As a result of always wanting bigger and better things, these types of people have a hard time in being content with whatever state they are already in since they are never satisfied with what they already do have. As a result, they live in a lot of mental turmoil and they end up being totally miserable with all of their wealth and possessions. Hollywood is living proof that money, power, and material wealth will not buy you true happiness and fulfillment in this life.

As Christians, we already know that the key and secret to being able to find true inner happiness is by establishing a close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord.

Once you really start to walk in the Holy Spirit and start to draw much closer to God in your own personal relationship with Him – you will find a very funny thing starting to occur in your life. You will find that your love and desire for money and material possessions will start to wane and lessen.

All of sudden your new house, your new car, your new wardrobe, and all of those new toys just do not seem to matter much to you anymore. The initial infatuation with some of these bigger material possessions seems to want to fade. You stop wanting to think about the next new thing you could buy.

All of sudden, you start to become very content with what you already do have. You start to see how blessed you already are in the Lord, and your desire for wanting bigger and better things seems to want to wane. You start to realize what is most important in your life and where you should be setting your priorities at in this life.

***As you start to draw closer to the Lord in your own personal relationship with Him, the Holy Spirit will start to illuminate your mind as to what is most important in this life. Once this starts to happen, He will start to draw you closer to God and further away from material things.***

***The closer you start to draw to the Lord in this life, the further away you will start to get from the ways and material possessions of this world – especially in the obsessive and abnormal pursuits of money, power, and fame.***

***Once all of this starts to occur, then you will be able to live and dwell in the states that Paul is talking about in these verses. You will then start to become much more content with the material possessions you already have.***

***You will start to become much more content with whatever state you may be currently in as you realize that your happiness and state of well-being is founded and rooted in your personal relationship God and Jesus – not with the material possessions you already have in your life.***

You start to realize that drawing closer to God and seeking after His perfect will for your life is more important than anything else you could desire or seek after in this life. Once the Holy Spirit starts to open up your eyes, you begin to see what should really matter the most in this life.



If you could sum up the three most important things that you should be seeking after in this life, I think you could sum it up in these three types of pursuits:

- **Seek to establish a close, intimate, personal relationship with the Lord**
- **Seek to establish close, intimate, personal relationships with your family and friends**
- **Seek to accomplish the perfect will of God for your life**

If you start seeking after God, family, and friends to deepen and better your personal relationships with each one of them – and then top it off by seeking to accomplish whatever God wants you to do for Him on a daily basis – then the lure and desire for money and material possessions will start to wane and they will no longer rule your life.

Jesus could not have put it any better when He said that you could not serve both God and mammon in the parable of the Unjust Steward. The word **“mammon”** in this parable means wealth and riches. This is why Jesus also said that it is harder for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven than it is for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle.

The abnormal love of money, and the abnormal and obsessive pursuit of trying to acquire more of that money, is what has led so many people to total ruination. This is why these specific verses from the apostle Paul are so important for each and every Christian to really grab a hold of and burn into their memory banks, so that we do not ever forget what is most important in this life and where we should all be setting our priorities at in this life.

When you really study the wording in these three verses, the Bible is once again putting everything in proper perspective in relation to the big picture and how we should be looking at this life and what our goals and aspirations should be centered on.

***Bottom line – all of the money, material possessions, titles, awards, plaques, and trophies you may have acquired in this life will not be going with you when you die and cross over to enter into heaven.***

***The only three things that you will be taking with you when you cross over to be with the Lord is the personal relationship that you have established with Him down here on this earth, the personal relationships that you have established with your saved loved ones, and all of the***

***accomplishments, works, and fruit that you have achieved for God while doing His perfect will for your life.***

Jesus says that you will be rewarded for your good works and labors that you do for Him while down here on this earth. Works will not get you into heaven, as you can only be saved by His grace through your faith, but any good works that you do for God in this life will be appropriately and highly rewarded once you enter into heaven.

However, nothing else will cross over. I repeat, nothing else will be crossing over with you once you enter into heaven. They will all be left in the dust to rot and perish. That nice big house, that nice new car, all of those beautiful clothes, and all of the money you may have stored up in your retirement accounts will not be going with you to the other side.

***In other words, no suitcases will be need to be packed on your deathbed when you get ready to cross over to meet your Lord and Savior.***

Paul saw all of this very clearly, and this was why he was able to word the following verses so eloquently and perfectly.

I will go ahead and put each one of these verses under three separate captions, and then point out certain key words and phrases so you can get these words of knowledge and wisdom ingrained and imparted into your storehouse of knowledge that you are building up in the Lord.

## **1. Be Content With Such Things As You Have**

This first verse from Hebrews really hones in on learning how to be content with such things as you already have. The key word in this verse is the word **"things."** I believe God is targeting our material possessions and things with the way He has worded this specific verse. Here it is:

***"Let your conduct be without covetousness, and be content with such things as you have." (Hebrews 13:5)***

Notice this verse links the word **"things"** in with the phrase of letting your conduct be without covetousness – which means not wanting or desiring what other people may have by way of material possessions and goods that you may not have.

When you start seeking after God and His perfect will for your life, then God will start to bring in the material things you will need to operate in your calls and divine assignments for Him. I believe God is trying to tell all of us to learn how to be content and happy with whatever He does

bring in your life and not moan and complain with what He does not bring into your life.

Though we are all equal in the eyes of God, we are not all equal in the way material goods and possessions are distributed out in this life. Some people will make more money than others will. Some people will live in the bigger and fancier houses.

This is why God is starting off the above verse by stating that you are not to covet what other people may have that you do not have. Remember – what your neighbor may have that you do not have will not be going with them once they die and cross over to the other side.

## 2. Be Content In Whatever State You Are In

In this next verse, the apostle Paul takes it one step further. In addition to learning how to be content with whatever material goods and possessions you may already have in the Lord – Paul is now stating that we must also learn how to be content with whatever state we may find ourselves in.

For many in the type of world we live in today, this one is really a hard one to get worked into their mindset and way of thinking. Many people are constantly complaining about their current lot and state of affairs. They are always looking for that better and bigger thing, that new romance, that new job, that new friend, that new thrill, that new promotion, etc.

These types of people have never learned how to stop and enjoy what they already do have. They have not appreciated what God has already done for them. They are always looking out at the horizon wondering when things are going to get bigger and better for them.

***Granted, God wants us to continue to grow in His knowledge, grace, and power. And in that growth process there will be new advances, new things, new adventures, new opportunities and new promotions that will occur during the course of our lives. But we even have to keep all of this in proper balance and perspective.***

***If we are always concentrating and focusing on what God may do for us in our futures – we will never be able to fully enjoy what He has just done for us in our present. Paul was really able to see and grasp this piece of revelation from the Lord.***

***He found a major spiritual secret in being able to find true, inner peace and happiness in the Lord in this life – and that spiritual secret is learning how to be content and happy in whatever state you may be at with God right now in your present set of circumstances.***

If you cannot find happiness, joy, peace, and contentment in the Lord with what He has already done for you in your present – then you will probably not be able to find it with whatever He will want to do for you in your future, since you will always be looking for that next, new, big thing that you think will make you happy, content, and fulfilled.

Then when God does bring you up into the next level with the next round of rewards – you are once again looking off into your future wondering what God can do for you next instead of living in and enjoying your present. This is why Jesus says that we are not to worry about tomorrow and what tomorrow may bring. If we are always looking off onto tomorrow and what tomorrow may bring, we will never be able to fully appreciate and live with what we already have today.

Here is this most profound verse:

***“Not that I speak in regard to need, for I have learned in whatever state I am, to be content: I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound. Everywhere and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me.” (Philippians 4:11)***

Notice Paul says that he has learned to be content in **“whatever state”** he is currently in. He then further expounds on this by saying that he has learned how to be content when things are going good and when things are going bad. He also says he is content no matter where he is at.

In other words, Paul is covering the entire board on this issue. He has learned the secret to being content and happy in the Lord requires that you learn how to be content no matter what your present set of circumstances may be.

The word **“abased”** in the above verse means to be degraded or humiliated – to be lowered or brought down. He is covering one end of the spectrum to the other when he says that he has learned to be content when things may be at their lowest levels in his life, and when things may be at their highest level when he uses the words **“abound”** and **“full.”** In other words, he has learned how to be content whether he is abounding or abasing.

***Material things do not mean much to God. Your happiness and contentment in this life is found directly in the quality of your personal relationship with God and Jesus.***

***The better the quality of your personal relationship with God and Jesus, the more happy and content you will find yourself becoming in this life. It really is that simple – and Paul found that secret out very early on in his walk with the Lord.***

Paul then ends this verse by stating that he can do all things because Jesus can give him His strength to weather any storm cloud or adversity that could come his way. This was probably another reason why Paul was able to find this secret in being able to be content in the Lord no matter what his present set of circumstances were. Even in the middle of the worse type of storm cloud imaginable, Paul found out that the Lord was always there to help him weather and get through any storm cloud that life or the devil could throw his way.

And boy, did this guy have to go through some severe storm clouds in his life. He is perfect living proof that you can go through some real severe adversity in your life, and yet still keep your head and act together in the Lord. If Paul made it through some of the severe trials and tribulations that he personally encountered in his life, then all of us can make it through whatever storm clouds we may have to face in this life.

This one verse from Paul is loaded with major revelation. Study and meditate on this particular verse, and get these spiritual secrets worked and imparted into your mindset and way of thinking so you can learn to get them implemented into your personal walk with the Lord.

### **3. Godliness With Contentment is Great Gain**

This last verse from Paul really puts the icing on this entire cake. In addition to learning how to be content with whatever things we may already have and in whatever state we may be in with the Lord – Paul now adds one more factor to this equation. He adds that we are to walk in **“godliness”** in addition to learning how to be content.

In one, simple, little sentence – he puts all of it together in the following verse and says that **“godliness with contentment is great gain.”** This phrase is so catchy, I decided to use it as the title of this article.

The word **“godliness”** in some of the different Bible Dictionaries is defined as:

- **Holy living**

- **An attitude and style of life that acknowledges God's claims on human life and seeks to live in accordance with God's will**
- **To be devout, reverence to God manifested in actions**

Someone who is godly has godly traits and qualities built up into their personality.

***What Paul is trying to tell us in this one powerful sentence is that it is a great thing and a great gain if you can learn how to be content with whatever you may have, with whatever you may get, with whatever state or current situation you may be in – and then to walk out this state of contentment with godly character and qualities manifesting through your personality.***

Learning how to be godly in your walk with the Lord is once again all part of the sanctification process that God would like to start with each one of us. As God starts the process to transform you into the express image of His Son Jesus, then you won't be able to help but to become more godly in your personal walk with Him.

Here is the verse. Notice the comments Paul makes about those who are not godly and some of the fleshly things these kinds of people are operating in.

***"If anyone teaches otherwise and does not consent to wholesome words, even to the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness, he is proud, knowing nothing, but is obsessed with disputes and arguments over words, from which come envy, strife, reviling, evil suspicions, useless wranglings of men of corrupt minds and destitute of the truth, who suppose that godliness is a means of gain.***

***From such withdraw yourself. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition.***

***For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness,***

***godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness.” ( 1 Timothy 6: 3-11)***

This entire verse is a real mouthful! Notice Paul makes two specific comments about money and wealth in general. He says that the love of money, not the money itself, is the root of all kinds of evil – and then he says that those who are always trying to become rich in this life fall into a bad temptation and snare which will end up drowning them in destruction and perdition. These are some very harsh and strong words!

This verse will line up with what Jesus has said in that it is harder for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God than it is for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle. Paul even makes the charge that the love of money has caused some to stray from their faith in God. Is he saying that some can lose their salvation over this issue with God?

It is very interesting in this verse that Paul is comparing learning to be content with what we already have with those who are constantly pursuing the money and wealth of this world. He ends this most powerful verse by telling us that we should all be pursuing godly things in our walks with the Lord, such as building up godly character and building up our levels of faith, love, patience and gentleness in the Lord.

Then right in the middle of this verse he really puts everything in proper perspective when he points out that we have brought nothing into this world and we will carry nothing out of it when we do die and cross over. **Again – no suitcases will need to be packed on our deathbeds.**

## Conclusion

When you put all three of these verses together, one right next to the other, the revelation from God the Father on what is most important in this life really comes through loud and clear.

If you have fully surrendered your entire being and your entire life into the hands of God the Father – then God will now start to lead you down the path that He will want you to follow in this life. And once you start to tread down that divine path, God will then make sure to bring you every single little thing you will need to walk out your divine call for Him in this life.

If you are walking in the perfect will of God in your life – then you are seeking after the kingdom of God. And Jesus has already told us that those who will seek after His kingdom will be given everything they will need to be able to live, work, and function in this life.

In this **“everything”** God will be giving you will be all of the money, wealth, material possessions, favor, people, friends, and marriage mates you will need so you can maximize your talents and abilities for the Lord in whatever He will be calling you to do for Him in this life.

However, as many as you already know, many of these extra goodies are not given to you all at one time. Many of God’s blessings are gradually released into the course of your life over a certain period of time. As a result of the way God will work some of His people in this area, many of them will get frustrated, anxious, and impatient waiting for the bigger and better blessings to come into their lives.

When this happens, you will really have to ground on the types of verses stated in this article. You will have to keep on top of what the big picture is all about and keep everything in proper perspective. If you do not, the frustration and impatience of waiting for all of this to manifest in your life could get you knocked right out of your call in the Lord if you decide to throw in the towel and start to try and do things your own way.

These three verses should be major, foundational verses each and every Christian should burn into their memory banks and seek to implement into their way of thinking and living in this life. This is what you call “big picture” revelation. This is major revelation on how we should all be looking at the big picture.

There is only one way to look at this life – and that is through the eyes of God Himself. You have to see things the way God sees them. If you try and see things through the eyes of this world or through the eyes of other people – you will never see things clearly and in truth. The apostle Paul was given a major spiritual truth from God the Father with the way he has worded two of these verses.

***Bottom line – learn to be content with whatever God has given you and with whatever state you are currently in – and seek to continue to walk as a godly man and a godly woman in the ways of our Lord.***

***If you do – then you will be able to find true inner peace, happiness, and joy in the Lord and it can all be given to you right where you are standing at right now.***

***As Jesus has already told us – do not worry about tomorrow or what tomorrow may or may not bring, for sufficient for the day is its own trouble.***

Paul found this secret out very early on in his walk with the Lord, and so can you if you work to get these powerful spiritual truths transmitted and imparted into your way of thinking and living in this life.



Sanctification in the Lord



## Slave to None – Servant to All

Once again, the apostle Paul comes in with a very powerful revelation on how we should look at ourselves in respect to our relationship with the Lord and in our relationships with other people in our life.

There are two very powerful and profound verses from 1 Corinthians that are telling us that we have now been bought back at a price as a result of Jesus dying on the cross for all of us.

When you put these two verses together, one right next to the other as you would two pieces of a jigsaw puzzle – the revelation comes through loud and clear from God the Father on exactly how we should be looking at our relationship with Him and the other people in our life.

These two verses will tell us:

- **Not to become slaves of men**
- **That we are free from all men**
- **We are to be servants to all**

Put all of this together, and you can bottom line this revelation in one simple statement. We are to be a **slave to none and a servant to all**.

Once you become saved and born again by accepting Jesus Christ as your personal Lord and Savior, God and Jesus will now become your true Lord and Master in this life and the life to come. You no longer even belong to yourself, much less belong to anyone else in this life.

In the first two verses I will list below, Paul is telling us that we are not to become slaves to other men. He says that we have now been made free from all other men in this life. Yet at the same time, he tells us that we are to be a servant to them all so that we might win the more of them to the Lord.

What this is telling us is that we really have to keep this piece of revelation in proper perspective. Though no man or no woman owns us in this life, God will still want us to work very closely with Him in serving others in this life. What this means is that we will all have to try and work together in some type of unity and harmony with one another so we can all accomplish what God wants us to get done in this life.

In some of the other verses I will list in this article, God is telling us that we are to be subject to rulers and governing authorities, that we are to obey those who rule over us, and that we are to submit ourselves to the ordinances of man for His sake.

What this means is that we are to honor and work with our bosses in the work place, with our political leaders in public office, with the president of our country, and with your parents if you are still under-age and still living at home with your parents.

The best way to look at this piece of revelation is like looking at a two sided coin. On the one side of the coin, you now belong to God and Jesus. You do not belong to any one man, woman, country, political leader or to even yourself. God has bought you back at the price of His Son's death on the cross and He, and He alone, is now your Lord and Master in this life and the new life to come.

As a result, God the Father will now be the One leading your life in the direction that He will want it to go in. He will now be the One to lead you to the jobs that He will want you to have in this life, to the people He will want you to help, to the spouse He will want you to marry, and to the [friends](#) that He will want you to have in this life. Through the Holy Spirit, God the Father will perfectly lead you every step of the way with the perfect life that He now has planned out for you.

***Neither you or anyone else in your life has the right and authority to control and lead your life from the moment you become saved and born again – and have fully surrendered yourself to God and His perfect plan and destiny for your life.***

***This right and authority now belongs to God the Father – and no one, I repeat, no one will usurp His authority in this area of your life. God the Father now has total control over your life and He will now be the One to call all of the shots in your life. This right no longer belongs to you or anyone else in this life. Your divine destiny now belongs to God the Father.***

However, there is now the flip side to this coin. Though God will be personally guiding you every step of the way with what He will be doing with your life, you are still going to have to work in unity and harmony with other people in this life.

If God leads you to a specific job that He will want you to take, but you cannot respect and subject yourself to those who will be in charge over you, then you are not going to be able to survive in that job, and as a result, you will have just taken yourself right off a major step that God had just planned out for you and your life.

Some Christians have problems with taking orders from anyone, especially from those who are in some type of authority over them. They have very little respect for those in authority over them and they thus do not last very long in most of the jobs they take.

As a result, God is constantly having to go to plans B and C for them in order to try and help keep them afloat. As a result, they end up walking in more of God's permissive will for their lives rather than in God's perfect will because they keep walking right off the steps that He keeps leading them to climb.

When it is all said and done, and their life is totally reviewed up in the Judgment Seat of Christ, they will be shown what more they could have accomplished in this life had they just learned to settle down and work in harmony and unity with some of the bosses and supervisors that God was initially leading them to work with in the first place.

Each step that God will lead you to climb in this life is a vital and important step as you climb up your personal ladder of success in Him. And in some of these steps will be the specific jobs that God will be wanting you to take for Him. And in these jobs, God will be expecting you to work in harmony and unity with your bosses and the other employees. God will want you to become a team player, even if things are not being run smoothly and efficiently in the day-to-day operation of the job.

Get yourself thrown off one or more of these particular steps because you could not work with those in authority over you, and you could get yourself thrown right out of God's call for your life. This is why it is so important that you get this particular piece of revelation firmly and solidly worked and planted into your mindset and way of thinking in this life. It could mean the difference as to whether or not you fully accomplish all of what God has in store for you in this life.

However, the reverse is also true on all of this. As you will see in one of the verses I will list below – God will also be looking at those who will be in authority over you. This verse says that masters are to give to their servants what is just and fair, knowing they have a Master in heaven who will be watching over all that they do.

This means that all bosses and supervisors better be treating their fellow employees with respect, kindness, and fairness in their dealings with them or they will have to answer to God Himself on their day of judgment with Him.

However, as we already know, not everyone who is in authority over you will be treating you fairly and justly. If this should happen to any of you, then you will need to go to God the Father in prayer and ask Him how you should handle the problem you may be having. With many people operating out of their flesh in this life, many who are in positions of authority and power have let a lot of this power go straight to their heads. As a result, they have abused many of those who are working underneath them.

This kind of scenario happens across the board in just about every situation you can imagine. It can happen in any type of work environment, or in families where one or both of the parents start to either abuse one another or some of their children. It can happen in boyfriend-girlfriend relationships or even in best-friend relationships.

Many of these relationships can deteriorate over time down to very dysfunctional levels. If or when this should ever happen to any of you – go to God the Father and ask Him how you are to handle this and whether or not it is time for you to cut the cords and break free from the relationship. Sometimes God will ask you to stay a little while longer. Other times He will either ask you to leave, or He will move in and make some type of change Himself to get you out from under someone else's demeaning dictatorship.

We have a perfect testimony of this in the Testimonies section of our website. The title of this testimony is "Battle Prayer Against an Adverse Situation at Work."

In this testimony, a friend of mine's husband came under some severe abuse from a new boss that came to work for his company. He had been with the company for a long time and he was only 5 years away from being able to retire. He did not want to quit, but he couldn't take for much longer the severe abuse his new boss was throwing at him.

My friend then went into the gap with God the Father behind the scenes – and God literally moved within a space of 12 hours to set this man completely free from the abusive boss he was working under.

When he went into work the next morning, one of the higher-ups called him in and told him they were going to transfer him to another shift because they did not want him leaving or getting fired from this new boss. Complete and total deliverance was given to this man within 12 hours after he had been under this man's abusive rule for about 6 months – and this was all as a direct result of his wife going in the gap with God the Father behind the scenes for his deliverance!

***If any of you have fallen into any kind of dysfunctional and abusive relationship with any of your parents, spouses, bosses, or friends – go to God the Father and ask Him how you should handle the problem.***

***You have now fallen into a battle situation and you will now need to get your orders direct from God on how to handle the situation. Though God wants us to be a servant to all – this does not mean you have to become a submissive doormat and punching bag for someone else's dysfunctional and psychotic behavior.***

Many women are being physically abused by their boyfriends or husbands. Many young girls are being sexually abused by their fathers or someone who is close to their family. Many bosses are sexually harassing some of their female co-workers. This kind of abnormal and abusive behavior is totally unacceptable in God's eyes and He will help you to properly deal with it if you approach Him in prayer.

We have another testimony in the Testimonies section of our site of a married girl who was being severely physically abused by her husband. We showed her how to plead the Blood of Jesus directly against him and the physical abuse he was inflicting upon her – and God moved in very quickly to completely stop all of the physical abuse she had been taking over the last year or two. The title of this testimony is "Pleading the Blood Against Physical Abuse."

However, on much smaller matters, there will be times that you will just have to turn your cheek and let the matter go. You are going to have to know when to engage and when to just let certain matters go as best as you can. But realize that God does have limits with His own patience, and He will move in with a very strong hand to get you delivered out of something if someone you know has started to get out of control with how they are interacting with you.

Now I will give you the specific verses from Scripture that deal with this very profound truth.

## 1. Slave to None – Servant to All

These first three verses will really hit the nail right on the head. They will specifically tell us that we are **"not to become slaves of men"** and that we are **"free from all men"** – but at the same time we are to be a servant to all so that we might win the more of them to God and Jesus.

These verses will also tell us that we are to remain with God and His calling on our lives. The last verse I will list makes an extremely profound statement when it says that we **"are the Lord's"** and as such, we are to **"live to the Lord"** and that we are to **"die to the Lord."**

Bottom line – we belong to the Lord, and we work and live for Him, and Him alone in this life – and no one else!

These first three verses are major power verses. Here they are:

- **"You were bought at a price; do not become slaves of men. Brethren, let each one remain with God in that calling in which he was called." (1 Corinthians 7:23)**

- **“For though I am free from all men, I have made myself a servant to all, that I might win the more ... ” (1 Corinthians 9:19)**
- **“For none of us lives to himself, and no one dies to himself. For if we live, we live to the Lord; and if we die, we die to the Lord. Therefore, whether we live or die, we are the Lord’s.” (Romans 14:7)**

In three very powerful verses, God the Father is giving all of us full and complete revelation on how we should be viewing this life in respect to our personal relationship with Him and with the other people in our life.

## **2. Be Subject to Rulers and Authorities**

These next four verses will help keep the above three verses in proper perspective. Though God is telling us that we belong to Him and no one else in this life – we still have to be able to work in unity and harmony with other people, and the only way we can do this, especially in the workplace, is that we have to be willing to be subject ourselves to those who will rule over us in some way.

These next set of verses will tell us that we have to be willing to be subject to rulers and authorities, to those who will rule over us in some way, and to every ordinance of man. These verses will tell us that this will be including Kings and Governors, which means the presidents and political leaders of our countries.

When the Bible says that we are to obey those who will rule over us, I believe God is telling us to respect and obey those who are in positions of leadership and authority in our lives such as our bosses, the CEO’s of the company you may work for, the direct foremen or supervisors you may be reporting to, and to any other leader of any other group or organization you may be working for.

Jesus did not try and overthrow the Roman government when He was walking down here on our earth – and unless God is leading you to dethrone a dictator who has got completely out of control with what is happening in your work place – God will expect you to do the best you can to get along with everyone else that you will work with, and to obey all of the rules that your superiors would like you to abide by.

Here are 4 very good verses on this issue.

- “Remind them to be subject to rulers and authorities, to obey, to be ready for every good work, to speak evil of no one, to be

peaceable, gentle, showing all humility to all men." (*Titus 3:1*)

- "Obey those who rule over you, and be submissive, for they watch out for your souls, as those who must give account." (*Hebrews 13:17*)
- **"Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as supreme, or to governors,** as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and for the praise of those who do good. For this is the will of God, that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men – as free, yet not using your liberty as a cloak for vice, but as servants of God. **Honor all people. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honor the king.**" (*1 Peter 2:13*)
- "Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God. Therefore whoever resists the authority resists the ordinance of God, and those who resist will bring judgment on themselves." (*Romans 13:1*)

The last verse gives us a very solemn warning when it says that we will have to answer to God on our day of judgment with Him if we have not sought to obey those in authority over us. It says that if we resist and disobey our leaders – then we are disobeying God Himself, since God is the One who will be deciding who gets these types of leadership positions in the first place.

These verses are also stressing the importance that we all try and get along with one another when it says we are to honor the king, to love the brotherhood, to honor all other people, to speak evil of no one, and to learn how to be peaceable, gentle, and showing humility to all men.

If more people could learn how to abide by some of these basic principles and truths, many of our workplaces could become much more fun and pleasant to work in.

### 3. Masters – Treat Your Servants Just and Fair

Just as God the Father was targeting all of us who will be working under some type of rule from our bosses and supervisors in the above verses – these next two verses from the Lord will be targeting all of those who will be ruling over us.

God says that those who are in any type of leadership position over us should be making sure they treat all of us just and fair. The words **"just**



**and fair”** are two very intense words when you really look at how they apply in our workplaces. Many bosses, CEO’s, foremen and supervisors are not treating a lot of their workers just and fair. They are playing favorites with certain people and running roughshod over others.

Many have let their positions of leadership and authority go to their heads. As a result, none of their fellow workers want anything more to do with them. From there, communication will start to shut down and productivity will eventually end up suffering as a result.

To all of you who are in supervisory positions in your jobs – grab a hold of what these next two verses are trying to tell you.

- **“Masters, give your servants what is just and fair, knowing that you also have a Master in heaven.” (Colossians 4:1)**
- **“Do not withhold good from those to whom it is due, when it is in the power of your hand to do so.” (Proverbs 3:27)**

Notice the last part of the first verse when it says that you have a Master in heaven who is watching how you handle your position of leadership. If you are not treating your employees fairly and justly, then you will have to answer to God Almighty Himself on your day of judgment with Him.

***Treat your employees like you yourself would want to be treated – with fairness, honesty, respect, and kindness. If you do, then you will be loved by them and they will want to work harder for you. And if they will want to work harder and better for you, then you will end up becoming much more productive and profitable on your end of the job.***

***What goes around will eventually come around. Sow good seeds in your work environment and you eventually will reap a nice harvest. Sow bad seeds of arrogance, fear, and intimidation and you will eventually reap corruption, death, and destruction.***

***Saddam Hussein is a perfect example of someone who ruled his people in every wrong way imaginable. He completely abused all of the power that was given to him and he ended up losing everything that took him years to build – and all of this was completely lost in a matter of days!***

***Satan, Hitler, and all of the Saddam Husseins of this world have eventually fallen, and so will you if you are not treating your employees fairly, justly and honestly. Remember – God***

***the Father is watching you very closely with how you treat all of those who are working under you!***

Any type of leadership position given to you by God is a big promotion and a nice blessing. The Bible says that to whom much is given, much more will be expected. Do not lose sight of this big picture and what really matters the most at the end of your day and eventually at the end of your life. You will eventually be judged by God Himself with how you have handled your job and with what kind of working relationship you had established with all of those who had worked under you.

#### **4. Submission in Your Marriage**

For those of you who are married, this next verse will tell you how God wants you to interact with one another. In this verse, it says that wives are to submit to their husbands. God says that the husband is the head of the wife. He then says that Jesus is the head of the church, and just as the church is supposed to be subject to Jesus, wives are to be subject to their husbands in the same way. God is thus giving us a proper chain-of-command that is operating in His kingdom.

However, just because God has told us that wives are supposed to be subject to their husbands does not give the husbands the right to abuse their wives. This verse ends with a very strong warning in that husbands ought to love their wives as their own bodies. In other words, you should love your wife as you would love yourself, which is part of the second greatest commandment in that you are to love one another as you would love yourself.

***If you will love your wife in the way that God would really want you to love her – you will not be physically and/or verbally abusing her. You will treat her like the God-given treasure that she really is. If your wife has been given directly to you by God, then you have been given one of the greatest blessings that God can bestow upon you in this life.***

I know there are some Christians and other false religions that think this gives them some type of spiritual right to be able to abuse and totally control their wives. But this view is wrong, and nothing will trigger the release of God's wrath and anger on you and your life than forcing Him to watch you verbally and physically beat your wife into complete and total submission to your will and warped desires.

***Behind closed doors in many marriages across this world you see this dysfunctional and psychotic behavior occurring with alarming frequency. The way some men treat and abuse their wives is a crime of the highest order in the eyes of God***

***– and there will be hell to literally pay for some of them once they meet their Maker and they are forced to give an account of what they have done to their wives during the course of their married lives.***

When God says for husbands to love their wives, He means for you to love them in a godly way, not in an obsessive and compulsive way where your only desire is to seek to bend them to your will and way of thinking.

Here is the verse from our Lord which really puts all of this in proper perspective.

***"Wives, submit to your husbands, as to the Lord. For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body. Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything.***

***Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for it, that He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that He might present it to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish. So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself."* (Ephesians 5:22)**

For many Christians, this verse has been a rather controversial one. But if every Christian man and woman would learn how to love and treat others in the godly way that God would like us to, then there would be no one getting out of balance with the way the Lord has worded this verse.

For those of you who would like a good, detailed article on learning how to love others in the way God would like you too, we have another article in our site titled, "The Power of Love." In this article, I give you some of the key verses from the Bible on the kind of love that God would like to see all of us walk and live in.

## Conclusion

If you can learn to put all of the revelation in the above verses in proper perspective with how you look at things in this life – then you will be going a long way in being able to be set yourself free from other people, from the fear of other people, and from the corrupt ways and ideas of this world.

***Bottom line – you now belong to God and Jesus. They, and They alone, are now your Lord and Master in this life. You now work for Them, live for Them, and die for Them.***

Though you will have to work with others in the jobs you will now be taking in this life – remember that you are really working for God the Father. He is now the One who will be leading you to the specific jobs that He will be wanting you to take in this life. As a result, God will now be your true Boss and Employer, not the company you actually work for.

If you can learn to look at things from this point of view, you will be less likely to throw temper tantrums when things do not go the way you think they should.

***Work in the jobs that God will lead you to work in. Be subject to and work with those who will be your direct bosses and supervisors. Try to get along as best as you can with the other people you will work with.***

***If you can learn do all of this, then God will be well pleased with you, and He will then promote you to the next new level when it is your time to receive a new promotion or a new job from Him.***

This basic principle also will apply to your family and social life. Do the best you can to keep the peace and live in harmony and unity with all of those around you and with all of those who live with you.

But remember the flip side to this coin. Though there are times that God will want you to let certain matters go and to turn the other cheek – watch out for those who will try to sink their claws into you to try to abnormally control you and your life.

The Bible tells us that we have to be wise as serpents but harmless as doves. There are some people out there who are just bad apples. They are masters at manipulating and controlling others for their own gain and profit. Be led by the Holy Spirit as to who you should hook up with and who you should stay away from in this life.

But if by chance you have fallen into the clutches of someone who is abnormally abusing or controlling you in any way – go direct to God the Father in prayer and really press into Him to get His advice and counsel on how you should handle this kind of predicament – especially if this person is a spouse, a close friend, another member of your family, or if it is someone that you actually work with.

We have quite a few dramatic testimonies in the Stories and Testimonies section of our website – all showing you how God can go into battle for

you if you are willing to go on the offensive against whatever enemy or bad situation that may have just come your way.

Per the article I did titled, "Battle Verses of the Bible," God the Father will go into battle for you if you have been caught in one of these more extreme, dysfunctional, and unhealthy relationships with someone who you may know or work with.

***The Bible tells us that our God is a powerful Man of War. He will not hesitate to go into battle to deliver you out of a bad situation if you have fallen into the evil clutches of someone who has chosen to live this life out of the dark desires of their flesh.***

***Remember – you are now a slave to none and a servant to all in your walk with the Lord. You now belong to your Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. He, and He alone, will be your Lord and Master in this life. This right does not belong to you or anyone else in your life – no matter what they may try and tell you with their distorted and warped way of thinking.***

## Be Slow to Anger

With the very fast paced way of living that many of us are forced to live with in this country – stress has become a major factor in many people’s lives. As a result of the increase in stress in many of our lives, many people are now turning to anti-depressants, drugs, or alcohol to help try and calm themselves down and to help take their minds off all of the stress and uncertainty of this life.

For the people who will not attempt to rely on drugs, alcohol, or anti-depressants to help them handle the high levels of stress they are forced to deal with on a daily basis – many people are then forced to deal with the side effects that high levels of stress can have on you.

And one of the main side effects that high levels of stress can have on you is that it will shorten up your fuses. You will find yourself losing your temper with much more frequency and over things that you normally would have never lost your temper over. You will also find yourself losing your temper much more quickly than you ever had in your past.

As a result, we have some time bombs walking our streets and driving on our highways that are just ready to go off at the slightest bit of provocation. Road rage is still a major problem on some of our highways. Accidentally cut someone off, or drive too slow for someone else’s taste, and they will start honking, yelling, and cussing at you, and in some of the more extreme cases, they will literally try and chase you down, all over something that was very trivial to begin with.

To those of you who watch your local news everyday – there is case after case of people who have lost their tempers over something completely stupid and trivial, and as a result, they have either hurt themselves or hurt other people.

Parents, in some cases, have literally beat their children to death over minor disputes or over a child that was crying too long. Boyfriends have beat up or killed their girlfriends over jealous disputes. Parents have physically fought with one another, or with some of their coaches at some of their child’s athletic events over minor disputes over a coaches decision, or over a bad call made by the referee or umpire.

In all of these cases – the lack of self-control over one’s temper has caused some of these people to explode with rage and violence where they will literally strike out at the person that has set them off. This same scenario keeps repeating itself over and over again on a regular-daily basis throughout the entire world.

Even some Christians are operating with very short fuses. They are constantly yelling at their spouses, their children, and their co-workers. As a result, many of their family and friends want nothing more to do with them and all they do is tolerate them as best as they can.

Many marriages that have started out on a good and loving note have severely deteriorated over the years because one or both of the spouses have lost all reasonable control over their bad tempers. They have verbally and sometimes physically beat the love right out of their marriages. As a result, many people have lost their marriages, their relationships with their children, and their good friends. No one wants anything more to do with them, and they all end up being totally alone, depressed, and miserable – all because they could not keep proper control of their bad tempers.

For those of you who are having problems with keeping proper control of your bad tempers in the high stress world in which we all live in today – realize that there is help for you in this area from God Almighty Himself. Per the article that we have in our site titled, “The 9 Fruits of the Holy Spirit,” there are two very powerful fruits and divine qualities that the Holy Spirit can start to transmit up into the core of your personality. These two fruits are the fruits of peace and self-control.

***Unless you have the peace of the Holy Spirit operating in your mind and emotions – you are going to have a very hard time in handling all of the stress this life can throw at you.***

***You have to have a strong supernatural source of peace flowing through you, and you cannot get this kind of supernatural peace from your own emotions, or from your own mental makeup due to your own imperfections. This kind of strong supernatural peace can only be received direct from the Holy Spirit Himself. This is why the Bible tells us that these 9 fruits are from the Holy Spirit – not from us.***

The other fruit from the Holy Spirit that you are really going to need to combat this problem is the fruit of self-control. Unless you have the self-control of the Holy Spirit Himself flowing and operating through you, then you will find that your own level of self-control is not going to be good enough to give you complete victory in this area, especially if you have had this problem operating in you for a long time and it has now become a conditioned habit.

The first thing you are going to need to do is to find out what the Word of God has to say on this matter. In this article, I will give you 9 very good verses from the Bible on what God’s opinion really is on being quick-tempered and having a short fuse.

As you will see in the Scripture verses I will list below, God the Father is telling us:

- **To be slow to anger**
- **To be slow to wrath**
- **To cease from anger**
- **Not to be quick-tempered**
- **Not to let the sun go down on your wrath**
- **To overlook a transgression against you**

Jesus Himself has told us to turn the other cheek when warranted. Many of the things people are losing their tempers over are completely unacceptable in the eyes of God. There is a time to engage, but there is also a time not to engage. I believe there is something called righteous wrath, righteous anger, and righteous indignation. There are times that you can lose your temper, and rightly so.

God the Father really let it blow with some of the judgments He pronounced back in the Old Testament against certain groups of people – but every time God the Father would lose His temper, it was always for a very good reason. The Bible tells us that God the Father is slow to anger, but if you manage to hit the end of His fuse – watch out!

It was also the same with Jesus when He was walking on our earth. Jesus did not mince any words when attacking some of the Scribes and Pharisees for their hypocritical behavior. He also did not hold back when the money changers were trying to use His house of worship as a place to try and sell their goods to do business.

You have to know when to engage with righteous anger and when not to. The Bible says that God the Father is slow to anger, and as such, He wants all of us to be the exact same way in our dealings with ourselves and with other people.

As you will see in one of the verses I will list below, God the Father says that it is to our own glory and to our own benefit that we learn how to overlook transgressions that are made against us. In other words, it will be very pleasing to Him if we can learn how to let certain matters go that are not worth the time and energy to get all bent out of shape over.

The Bible tells us that it should be our aim in this life to be well-pleasing to the Lord – and losing your temper over anything and everything is not being well-pleasing to Him.

I will first start off by giving you some of the better verses from the Bible that deal with the issue of having a bad and quick temper. I will then end this article with a 2 step process that you can use if you really want to



work with the Lord in trying to defeat and put to death this bad character flaw in your personality.

## The Scripture Verses

Here are 9 very good verses from the Bible on what God's opinion is on those who have bad and quick tempers.

1. **"The discretion of a man makes him slow to anger, and it is to his glory to overlook a transgression." (*Proverbs 19:11*)**
2. **"He who is slow to anger is better than the mighty, and he who rules his spirit than he who takes a city." (*Proverbs 16:32*)**
3. **"Therefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath; for the wrath of man does not produce the righteousness of God." (*James 1:19*)**
4. **"He who is slow to wrath has great understanding, but he who is impulsive exalts folly." (*Proverbs 14:29*)**
5. **"Cease from anger, and forsake wrath; do not fret – it only causes harm." (*Psalms 37:8*)**
6. **"A man of great wrath will suffer punishment; for if you deliver him, you will have to do it again." (*Proverbs 19:19*)**
7. **"Whoever has no rule over his own spirit is like a city broken down, without walls." (*Proverbs 25:28*)**
8. **"He who is quick-tempered acts foolishly ..." (*Proverbs 14:17*)**
9. **"Therefore, putting away lying, each one speak truth with his neighbor, for we are members of one another ... do not let the sun go down on your wrath, nor give place to the devil ... And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, wrath, anger, clamor, and evil speaking be put away from you, with all malice. And be kind to one another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, just as God in Christ also forgave you." (*Ephesians 4:25-32*)**

Notice in the last verse that it says not to let the sun go down on your wrath. This is very good advice for all married couples who like to carry some of the arguments of the day into their beds at night.

This last verse also says that we will grieve the Holy Spirit Himself if we have a lot of bitterness, anger, and wrath operating through us. We are to learn to forgive others, just as God the Father has now forgiven all of us through the Blood that His Son has shed on the cross for all of us. If God can fully forgive all of our trespasses, then we can learn to fully forgive others who will trespass against us. And if we can learn to forgive others, then we will be less likely to lose our tempers every time someone trespasses against us in some way.

Notice God says that those who cannot be slow to wrath are not producing the righteousness of God in their lives. He says those who are impulsive and lose their tempers easily and quickly are foolish and are exalting **“folly.”** The word **“folly”** means a **“lack of understanding and a lack of rational conduct – foolishness.”**

In other words, in God’s eyes, you are showing Him complete foolishness and a complete lack of understanding in what you are losing your temper over. You are looking like a complete fool and idiot to both Him and to other people with some of the trivial and foolish things you are losing your temper over. Most of the time people are not laughing with you, they are laughing at you.

The verse from Proverbs 19:19 says that a man of great wrath will suffer punishment. Sooner or later, your bad temper is going to get you into serious trouble. You are going to either lose it with the wrong person or in the wrong situation, and when that happens, there will be severe consequences. For some, it will literally mean having an early departure from this life.

***Flip off the wrong guy on the highway who may have just cut you off – and he may be the last person you will ever see alive again in this life!***

The verse from Proverbs 25:28 says that a man who has no rule over his spirit and emotions is like a city that is broken down without any walls. In other words, you will have no protection from either God or your enemies if you engage with the wrong person at the wrong time. You are leaving yourself wide open to demonic or human attack if you are not going to learn how to control your temper with how you react and respond to others – especially with those who will attempt to cross you in some way.

In the second verse above from Proverbs 16:32, God is saying that those who are slow to anger are better than the “mighty” and he who can take a city. By the way God has worded this verse, you can tell how big of a

thing it really is to Him that we learn how to control our emotions, especially our emotions of anger and wrath.

## Conclusion

So now that you know that God does not want us having quick and bad tempers, how do you start to get a real grip on this – especially if your quick and bad temper has been with you for a long time, and it is now become a habitual and conditioned response in the way that you respond to certain people or certain situations

I will give you a very simple 2 step process to be able to get deliverance from this condition.

**1.** Before God the Father will start to move to give you His supernatural help through His Holy Spirit to defeat this – you will have to agree to come into a full surrender of you and your entire life with Him. We have an article in our site titled, “The Full Surrender” in the Bible Basics section of our site.

In this article, I give you all of the Scripture verses pertaining to this full surrender that God is looking for from each one of us. I also give you a good, basic, full surrender prayer in the middle of this article on how to enter into this full surrender if you have never done this before with the Lord. Once you have entered into this full surrender with the Lord, you will now be ready for step two.

**2.** In this next and final step – all you have to do now is go to God the Father in prayer and put your request before Him – asking Him to help you out with this specific problem.

Tell God that you are having a problem in being able to control your temper with certain people and in certain types of situations. Tell God that you will now need His fruits of peace and self-control to be released up in you through His Spirit as two of the 9 fruits of His Holy Spirit.

Tell God that you will agree to work with Him once He starts to release His peace and self-control into your mind and emotions. Once God starts to release these two fruits into you – then you will have to work with Him on this. You will not be a passive robot in all of this. What this means is that you will have to make every concerted effort on your own to try and control the release of your quick and bad temper.

Every time you feel your bad temper wanting to explode up on you – you will have to use every ounce of mental will power to try and fight to keep it from exploding and releasing onto the person or situation that is

triggering its release. Sometimes you will manage to keep it under control, other times you will not.

But if you show God that you mean serious business with Him on this, and He sees that you are doing every thing that you possibly can within your own mental will power to try and defeat this – then God will start to come to your rescue, and He will then start to release His peace and self-control into you so you can properly finish this job.

***Once God's peace and self-control starts to flow into your personality through His Holy Spirit – then it will become much easier for you to keep control of your bad temper.***

***The Bible says it is by the power of the Holy Spirit that you will put to death the deeds of your body – and one of the deeds of the flesh and body that you will definitely want to put to death is a lousy, foul, and bad temper.***

This is a powerful, supernatural type of help and work that you can receive direct from the Holy Spirit Himself if you are open and willing to work with Him on this as part of your sanctification process in the Lord.

## Pride Will Come Before the Fall

As part of the sanctification process that God would like to start with each one of us – one of the first things that God will be doing, through the power of the Holy Spirit, is to either take out or prevent certain types of negative qualities from entering into our personalities.

Without question, one of the major negative qualities that God will be moving very strongly on to either prevent it from being able to enter into us to any significant degree, or to literally knock it right out of us if it has moved too far up into our personalities, is the negative quality of pride.

***This cancerous, lethal, and destructive quality, probably more than any other negative quality, has brought down more kingdoms, toppled more empires, caused more wars, destroyed more marriages, ruined more friendships, and led more criminals into our jail systems than all of the other negative qualities combined and put together.***

***The spirit of pride has to be the absolute king of all the negative and destructive qualities that can enter into our personalities – and no one is safe and immune from it. All Christians, young and old, super saint or not, have got to keep a sharp eye on this negative quality, and do everything they can not to let this spirit get a foothold and grip into their personalities and mindsets.***

As you will see in the one of the Scripture verses I will list below, the spirit of pride will always come right before destruction and a major fall. Even unbelieving heathens are aware of this basic truth from our Bible.

The saying that “**pride will come before the fall**” is an universal truth understood by everyone. But as understood and hated as this quality is by most people, many still succumb to its enticing and seductive nature, and many end up losing everything as a result of the consequences of wallowing in it for too long of a period of time.

For the record, I believe there is a good kind of pride and a bad kind of pride. Many Christians, after reading what some of the verses from the Bible has to say about this toxic quality, try to remove all sense of pride from them and their lives. As a result, they end up reducing a lot of their own natural joy in the Lord.

Webster’s Dictionary, and some of the other different Bible Dictionaries describe this good kind of pride as follows:

- **Proper respect for one-self, self-respect**
- **A reasonable or justifiable self-respect**
- **Sense of one's own dignity and self-worth**
- **Delight or satisfaction in one's own or another's achievements**

If your child comes home and tells you that he has just received straight A's on his report card, your first natural and instinctive response will be to want to tell them "how proud" you are of them and what they have just accomplished. If your husband comes home and tells you he has just received a nice promotion and pay raise at work for the good job he has been doing – again, your first natural response will be to want to tell him how proud you are of him and his efforts to try and make a better life for you and your family.

This is the good kind of pride. There is nothing wrong in having this good kind of pride for what your children may be able to accomplish, and for what you may accomplish in your own work for the Lord in this lifetime. I believe that God Himself wants us to have this good kind of pride for the blessings and opportunities He may bring our way in this life.

If God has just blessed you with a nice new house, there is nothing wrong in being proud of that house and wanting to take good care of it. If God has blessed you with a wonderful marriage with a beautiful mate and beautiful children, there is nothing wrong in taking pride in all of them and what they may accomplish for the Lord in this life.

This good kind of pride that you may have in the actual work that you are doing for the Lord and with whatever blessings He may want to pass your way in this life all help to contribute to your own personal joy in the Lord. It helps to give you a nice sense of approval, and it also helps to motivate you to want to keep pressing further on with the Lord in whatever He has called you to do for Him in this life.

However, as with anything else that may start out good, there is always the danger of possible excess. What starts out as a simple and a humble type of pride can start to grow into something much more deadly if a person does not properly keep on top of it.

One of the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit is the fruit of self-control. Not only will you need to use your own self-control to help keep a proper grip and lid on this quality from getting out of control in your personality – but you will also need the self-control of the Holy Spirit Himself to help you keep proper control of it, especially for those who are called by God to move into any type of leadership roles within His Body.

In the verses I will list below, you will see two key words being repeated several times. These two key words are the words **“pride”** or **“proud,”** and the word **“haughty.”**

Webster’s Dictionary, and several of the different Bible Dictionaries describe the negative kind of pride as follows:

- **An unduly high opinion of oneself**
- **Exaggerated self-esteem, conceit**
- **Haughty behavior resulting from arrogance**
- **An improper and excessive self-esteem known as conceit and arrogance**
- **A sin of attitude and of the heart and spirit**
- **A puffed up and inflated ego**
- **Boasting and high-mindedness**
- **A conceited sense of one’s superiority**
- **Highly exalted in attitude, opposite from the virtue of humility**

All you have to do is compare the two different sets of definitions of the good kind of pride versus the bad kind of pride to see what the real differences are between the two of them.

What gets some Christians into major trouble with the Lord is falling and entering into the second category mentioned above. What can start out as a humble, justified, and reasonable kind of self-respect for one’s self and one’s own efforts and accomplishments in the Lord can quickly deteriorate and descend down into the bad kind of pride where one starts to lose all sense of who they really are in the Lord.

The other key word that you will see listed in the verses below is the word **“haughty.”** Here is what Webster’s and some of the other Bible Dictionaries have to say about this negative quality:

- **Showing great pride on oneself and disdain**
- **Contempt or scorn for others**
- **Proud, arrogant, supercilious (disdain or contemptuous)**
- **An arrogant spirit**

As you will see in the Scripture verses below, the Lord is using some very intense and strong language when describing this negative quality. Not only does God call pride an actual sin in His sight, but He goes one step further and calls it an actual **abomination!**

As I have stated several times in some of my other articles, whenever God the Father is using the word **“abomination”** to describe what He is thinking about something – He is using the most extreme and intense word that He possibly can to let all of us know, without any other possible

interpretation, that we are to have no part of the activity He is describing as an abomination. We are to avoid it like the plague.

When God puts the qualities of pride and haughtiness in this abomination category – you know that He is giving all of us a very serious warning on this issue.

In the Scripture verse below where God the Father is telling us that pride and a haughty spirit will come before destruction and a fall – He is giving all of us major revelation. The history of our world, and what we see on a daily basis throughout the entire world, are all showing us this piece of revelation in actual operation.

***The history of our world is littered with the casualties that this negative and demonic quality and mindset has caused. It literally, and I mean literally, has completely toppled and destroyed kingdoms, countries, nations, alliances, companies, marriages, and good friendships.***

Probably the greatest fall that has ever occurred coming from this one negative quality may end up being the story of how Satan fell from heaven. The Bible only gives us partial information about this story.

***As you will see in the three Scripture verses I will give you below on how Satan managed to get cast out of heaven – the quality of pride was definitely one of the main causes that led to his own personal downfall in the Lord.***

***And to think that he was then able to get one-third of the rest of the angels to get cast out of heaven right along with him! I repeat – one third of all the angels who were living with him in heaven were also cast out – and they have now all permanently lost their place in heaven for all of eternity!***

There is no more saving grace for Satan and all of these fallen angels. And to think that all of them were born and created up in this perfect heavenly environment – and then to throw it all away – all because one angel thought he could literally overthrow God Almighty Himself. Not only has this got to be the height of pure arrogance and pride, but it also has to be the height of pure stupidity!

As you will see in one of the Scripture verses below, Satan was one of the highest of all the angels God has ever created. He was allowed to literally walk on the mountain of God the Father Himself. He thus had to know how awesome and how powerful God the Father really is and that there was no way that anyone could ever begin to try and overthrow Him.



If God is all-powerful and there are no other Gods in existence, then anyone with half a brain can deduce that God cannot be defeated or overthrown. But Satan obviously was blinded by something else from being able to see this simple and logical truth – and that something else was probably the spirit of pride and arrogance that he had operating in him by the time he started to reach this point of no return. I believe this is why God is telling us in this particular verse that the spirit of pride will come right before the fall – as pride is what will start to blind you as to what the real truth of a matter is.

***A perfect example of this in our present day and age has to be the fall of Saddam Hussein in Iraq. All this man had to do was to let the UN inspectors complete their investigation into his country for weapons of mass destruction that were never found – and he could have easily retained full control of his built up, corrupt empire. But his pride got in the way.***

***He had to show our country and the rest of the world that he could stand up and defy the strongest military might in the world. As a result of letting his pride get in the way and cloud his better judgment on giving into the UN inspectors, he literally lost his entire kingdom in just a matter of a few days!***

***He literally went from living in the most lavish and expensive living quarters that anyone could possibly live in to being found at the bottom of a hole in the ground all disheveled and unkempt.***

***We are talking about someone falling from the highest peak of a mountain as king and ruler of an entire country to the lowest depths that anyone can possibly fall to in this life – behind the bars of a jail losing all of his freedom, all of his wealth, and all of his contact with his family and friends.***

You have all heard many preachers talk about Joseph going from the pit to the palace. Saddam Hussein managed to do just the opposite. In a matter of just a few days, he literally went from the palace to the pit, and now will probably be executed once his trial has been completed.

Saddam Hussein, Adolph Hitler, Joseph Stalin and all the rest of the despotic and evil dictators who have ever ruled on this earth will all go down as major history lessons for all of us showing us what pride, arrogance, and a haughty spirit can do to a person and his life.

It will first completely destroy a person's soul and spirit, and then it will eventually destroy and ruin the rest of what life they still have left. And then for many of them, they will end up being cast into the most horrible

place imaginable when they die and cross over – hell itself, and then eventually into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone after the Millennium has taken place, where the Bible says that the smoke of their torment will ascend forever and ever.

The fall of Satan and all of these evil rulers in this world will serve as major examples of how deadly the spirit of pride can be, and how it can completely destroy a person and his life much the same way that an incurable cancer can invade and attack a person's physical body. Once a cancer has spread too far into a human body where medical treatment can no longer stop it, the infected person will die shortly thereafter. It is the exact same way with the spirit of pride.

Once pride starts to seep into someone's personality to any significant degree – it has to be dealt with and neutralized with the help of the Holy Spirit. If it is not, then it will continue to grow and spread through that person's personality and mindset.

From there, it will start to seep into their emotions, actions, and behaviors. And once this negative quality starts to manifest into their actions and behaviors, then their judgment will start to cloud. And once their sense of proper judgment starts to cloud up, they will no longer be able to separate truth from error. The only truth they will be able to see is what they perceive the truth to be, not what God's real truth is, or what anyone else may try and tell them what is right.

They eventually end up becoming their own little god, thinking they have all of the answers to everything and that the entire world revolves around them and what they are trying to achieve and accomplish. They are no longer willing to be accountable to anyone else in their life, including God Himself.

They have forgotten and forsaken all of their true friends in this life. They have forgotten where they have come from, and they feel they no longer need any of God's help or guidance to get them to where they are going. They are now totally self-sufficient and they think they can literally conquer the world through their own efforts and wisdom.

And then sooner or later it happens – they fall – and they end up losing everything they have managed to build up over all of those years due to their own stupidity and imperfections.

This scenario not only happens with rulers of different countries, but this same scenario also describes what happens to CEO's of major companies, to managers, to supervisors, to foremen and to anyone else in any type of leadership position. With any type of position of leadership comes power and authority, and with power and authority comes the possibility of pride and corruption.

**Many people end up becoming criminals in this life as a result of too much of the wrong kind of pride operating in their personalities.**

**Their pompous, arrogant, conceited, know-it-all attitudes convince them that they are smart enough to be able to get away with breaking any law they see fit just to satisfy their own lusts and desires – even if it means committing cold-blooded murder.**

**Their inflated sense of pride and ego tells them they are too smart to get caught by the law, and then again, it happens. They are caught as a result of their own stupidity and imperfections, and many of them end up never seeing the light of day for the rest of their earthly lives.**

And all of this was as a direct result of the spirit of pride and arrogance they had operating in their mindsets and how they thought about things. This is why the Bible tells us that we have to be transformed by the renewing of our minds. We have to learn how to develop right thinking in our thought process.

As a result of some of these people never learning what to think right about in this life, many of them have either died before their time may have really been up, or they have ended up spending a good portion of their adult lives behind bars in an eight-by-six foot cell.

When God the Father says that pride will come before a “fall” – He is giving all of us a major warning that some of these falls could end up being very severe. For many, it will mean an early departure from this life. For others, it could mean a certain amount of time behind bars, the destruction and dissolution of their marriages, or possibly losing their jobs and the good pay they were making.

**There are many different things that we can “fall” from. As a Christian, do not ever tempt your fate with God the Father with what He is personally doing with you and your life. Stay humble and accountable in your walk with the Lord.**

**If you don’t, and pride starts to enter your personality to any significant degree with the Lord – God will be coming after you with two-by-fours and baseball bats upside your head to keep this deadly quality from becoming a part of your mindset and way of thinking in this life.**

**I have personally seen the Lord body slam several people to the mat when they got too far away from Him and started to**

***get too big for their britches as a result of too much pride starting to seep up into their personalities.***

***God has His ways of humbling and chastening you, and He will not be putting up with any of His own getting too far away from Him – especially in the area of pride, arrogance and haughtiness. He has already lost a third of His angelic host to this deadly quality, and He will do everything He possibly can not to lose any more of His children to this deadly sin and abomination.***

Now here are some very powerful verses from Scripture giving you what God's opinion really is on this deadly sin and abomination.

## **1. Pride is a Sin and an Abomination**

These first two verses perfectly set the stage for all of us as far as what God the Father really thinks of this negative spirit and quality that could infect anyone of us at anytime. God is specifically telling us in these two verses that anyone who has become too proud in his own heart is committing a sin and an abomination in His sight!

Burn these two verses into your memory banks, and make sure you never, ever let this deadly spirit get a foothold into your mind and heart.

- ***“A haughty look, a proud heart, and the plowing of the wicked are sin.” (Proverbs 21:4)***
- ***“Everyone who is PROUD IN HEART IS AN ABOMINATION TO THE LORD; though they join forces, none will go unpunished.” (Proverbs 16:5)***

Once again, God the Father could not make things any more clear. Not only is the spirit of pride a definite sin in His eyes, but He is now taking it one step further and calling it an actual abomination in His sight.

God has now drawn a major battle line in the sand on this one particular negative quality with the way He has worded these two verses. And He is letting all of us know, loud and clear, that He will not want any of us to have any part of this destructive spirit that will not only destroy our personal lives down here on this earth, but will also destroy and sever the personal relationship that we can have with Him.

## 2. God is Afar From Those Who Are Proud

This next verse will now take it one step further. Not only is God calling those who are proud an abomination before His very eyes – but this next verse will now tell us that God is **“afar”** from those who are proud. And when God says that He is becoming **“afar”** from you – you are in big trouble!

What this means is that your personal relationship with the Lord can be severely effected and possibly severed if you do not start to see the errors of your ways with this deadly quality. God will start to pull away from you in your own personal relationship with Him if you do not start to get yourself straightened out with Him on this issue of becoming too proud in your own heart.

If you have fallen into any kind of serious pride with the Lord, you still have some time to see the errors of your way and get back into right standing with the Lord. God will be willing to fully forgive you if you are willing to see that too much pride has entered into your mind and heart, and then be willing to confess and repent before Him from this deadly sin.

Humble yourself and get this sin confessed, forgiven, and removed from your soul before God is forced to take some kind of corrective action with you. He will only give you a certain amount of rope to run with before He pulls you in and takes the appropriate corrective actions to literally, and I mean literally, knock this deadly sin and abomination right out of your soul and spirit.

Here is the verse giving us this solemn warning:

***“Though the Lord is on high, yet He regards the lowly; but the proud He knows from afar.” (Psalm 138:6)***

There is nothing worse that can occur in your walk with the Lord than to have Him start to pull away from you in your own personal relationship with Him. This particular verse is giving all of us a major warning and should be taken very, very seriously.

## 3. Pride Will Come Before the Fall

These next two verses will now put the icing on the entire cake on this one particular sin. In addition to God calling pride a sin and abomination in His sight, and then telling us that He will start to pull away from us in our own personal relationship with Him – He is now giving us one more final dire warning in these next two verses.

In the first verse I will list below, God is telling us that **“pride goes before destruction”** and a **“haughty spirit before a fall.”** In the second verse, He states that **“before destruction the heart of a man is haughty.”** In other words, the spirit of pride and haughtiness can lead to a destructive type of fall.

***Again, Satan and Saddam Hussein are two perfect and classic examples of one man and one angel completely falling and losing everything they had built up over their years of living in heaven and on this earth – and they literally lost all of it in just a matter of a few days.***

***They have both fallen from the top of a major mountain down to the very bottom of that same mountain. They have both gone from the palace to the pit in one fell swoop! That’s how far and how fast someone can fall if they have been operating in the spirit of pride to any significant degree for any length of time.***

You can either choose to climb to the top of a mountain operating under a full surrender with God the Father where He will be the One to lead you up that mountain by His Holy Spirit – or you can choose to attempt to climb that mountain all on your own, operating under your own knowledge, wisdom, and pride.

Jesus has already told us that if we try and build our house all on our own efforts without any of God’s help or guidance, that we will end up laboring in vain when it is all said and done.

Saddam Hussein managed to build up his entire empire all on his own efforts and pride – but that same pride ended up being his downfall, and he literally lost everything that took him years to build up – and all of it was lost in a matter of just a few days. His dramatic fall is a perfect example of what Jesus is trying to tell us with this statement. Saddam’s efforts and accomplishments in this life all ended up being in total vain.

***The story of Satan in particular should also serve as a major history lesson for all of us on what can happen to someone if the spirit of pride gets too far ingrained into their heart and mindset.***

***If one of God’s highest created angels can literally fall from the top of a heavenly kingdom in the presence of God Almighty Himself – then anyone of us can fall in the exact same way if we do not stay on top of our walk with the Lord – especially in the area of our sanctification with the Lord where He is trying to mold, shape, and transform us into the express image of His Son Jesus Christ.***

These two verses in particular should be memorized by all Christians, as God the Father is giving all us a major revelation with the statements being made in both of these verses. Here they are:

- ***"Pride goes before destruction, and a haughty spirit before a fall. Better to be of a humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud." (Proverbs 16:18)***
- ***"Before destruction the heart of a man is haughty, and before honor is humility." (Proverbs 18:12)***

In the first verse, God is telling us that we will be better off hanging out with the more lowly and humble type of people in this life rather than trying to hang out with the type of people whose only goal in this life is to acquire more material wealth and riches. What wealth and riches you may be able to acquire in this life will all rot and perish the minute you die and cross over. Not once ounce, not one penny will be crossing over with you on your deathbed.

#### **4. Let No One Glory in Men**

These next 5 verses will add very nicely to all of the verses listed above. What happens to someone once the spirit of pride starts to enter into their personality is that they will then start to seek after their own glory. It now becomes all about them and them alone.

Christians who have fallen into this type of pride trap will not only start to try and steal the glory from anyone else who may be attempting to compete against them – but they will also try and steal the glory that would only be due to God Himself!

These next four verses are again, very strong words and revelation being given to us by the Lord, with all of it being for our own good. Here they are:

1. "... that no flesh should glory in His presence." (**1 Corinthians 1:29**)
2. ***"Therefore let no man glory in men ..."*** (**1 Corinthians 3:21**)
3. "Do not be wise in your own eyes; fear the Lord and depart from evil. It will be health to your flesh, and strength to your bones." (**Proverbs 3:7**)
4. But "He who glories, let him glory in the Lord." For not he who commends himself is approved, but whom the Lord commends. (**2**

***Corinthians 10:17)***

5. Thus says the Lord: "Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, let not the mighty man glory in his might, nor let the rich man glory in his riches; but let him who glories in this, that he understands and knows Me, that I am the Lord, exercising lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth. For in these I delight," says the Lord. (***Jeremiah 9:23***)

All 5 of these verses are laying it out very plainly and very clearly. We are not to glory in ourselves or to any other men and women in this life – and we are not to glory in our own accomplishments, in our own strength, or in any of the riches and wealth that we may have acquired in this life. The only Person that we are to glory to in this life is to the Lord Himself.

The fourth verse puts it very nicely when it says that we are not to commend ourselves for our own good works. Any commending that will be of any matter and value to us will be what the Lord will want to commend us for, not what we may want to commend ourselves for, or what anyone else may want to commend us for.

In other words, the only Person you should really be trying to impress and seeking approval from in this life is God Himself, since He will be the only One who will be judging and rewarding you when everything is all finally said and done on your life.

It's really quite amazing how many people in our materialistic, greedy, and self-centered society are only working and living for whatever glory, fame, and notoriety they can get from other people in this life instead of trying to work direct for God and His seal of approval for what they are doing with their lives.

## **5. Stay Humble in Your Walk With the Lord**

If God the Father does not want us walking with any kind of bad pride operating in our personalities, then what would be the exact opposite of having this kind of bad pride? These next 4 verses will tell you.

All 4 of these verses are telling us that we should be clothed with humility, that things should be done with a lowliness of mind, and that we should humble ourselves in the sight and under the mighty hand of God the Father. In other words, we all have to learn how to walk with a humble spirit and a humble mindset in our thoughts and in our actions towards ourselves, towards God, and towards all other people.

Here are 4 very good verses from the Lord giving us this piece of revelation:



1. "Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for "God resists the proud, but gives grace to the humble." (**1 Peter 5:5**)
2. "Let nothing be done through selfish ambition or conceit, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem others better than himself. Let each of you look out not only for his own interests, but also for the interests of others." (Phillipians 2:3)
3. "Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up." (**James 4:10**)
4. "Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time, casting all of your care upon Him, for He cares for you." (**1 Peter 5:6**)

Notice that if you are willing to walk with this kind of a humble spirit in this life, that God will lift you up and properly exalt you to some type of degree when the time is right.

In the type of materialistic, greedy, and competitive world that many of us are forced to live in today, trying to develop a real spirit of humility is a tall order. But God the Father, through the sanctifying work of the Holy Spirit on the inside of you, can work this kind of a humble spirit into your personality if you are willing to work with Him on it. This can be done, even in the type of competitive world we live in today if you really want God to help you in this area.

## 6. The Fall of Satan

As I stated at the top of this article, probably the greatest casualty of someone falling from this bad kind of pride operating in their personalities has to be Satan himself. The verses I will list below only give us partial information and knowledge as to what actually had occurred. We will have to wait until we get to heaven to get the rest of this story.

But these Scripture verses do give us enough information to get a basic understanding of what happened in his story, and what caused him to completely fall from grace in the first place with our Lord and Savior. When you really stop and think about this fallen angel's story, it really is beyond belief!

To think that God the Father gave him and the rest of these fallen angels a chance to literally make it up into His third heaven where He lives at compared to what the human race has to go through. We all live for trying to make it into this heaven. Satan and the rest of these fallen

angels were all born into this perfect heaven. They had it all right from the very beginning – and yet they still blew it!

They had God, they had His perfect heaven in which to live and work in, and they also had no other corrupting influences trying to come against them until Satan chose to rebel against God the Father after a certain period of time. What will be very interesting to find out is how long of a period of time it took before Satan started to corrupt in his personality, with the spirit of pride and lust causing him to want to try and rebel against God.

To think that all of these fallen angels had an equal chance and opportunity to make it in this perfect heavenly environment. All they had to do was keep their act together, stay humble and accountable in their walks with the Lord, do things God's way and stay out of trouble – and they all could have lived happily ever after for all of eternity in this perfect heavenly paradise. But for whatever reason, all of this was simply not enough for some of them. They had to have it all, and Satan apparently made some kind of a futile attempt to elevate and exalt himself above the throne of God Himself.

Since they were all living in God's presence in this third heaven for who knows how long – they all had to know that there was no other god or gods in existence, and that this one and only God was all-powerful and that He could not be literally overthrown. To have this kind of knowledge right at the beginning, and then to tempt their eternal fates by trying to literally overthrow this one and only Almighty God is totally beyond comprehension.

Either Satan and all of these angels were just plain stupid to begin with, or the spirit of pride was so blinding them, that they could no longer see the truth in certain matters and they thus thought they had a real chance to be able to literally overthrow our God. I have to believe that these fallen angels had the initial intelligence and knowledge to begin with to fully understand how the big picture was all set up with God the Father. I do not think they started out with any kind of major stupidity from being able to see this obvious truth.

But somewhere along the way pride entered in, and once it did, it started to blind and corrupt them. And once that corruption started to take place within their own natural personalities, it did not take long for them to malfunction to the dark side and then make an attempt to try and overthrow the Lord.

As a result of this treasonous and rebellious act, God the Father had no other alternative but to cast all of these abominable angels out of His presence for all of eternity – never, ever to be given another chance to be able to get back in!

Just stop and ponder and think on the eternal consequences of this one angel's rebellion against God – to be forever banished from the only environment they had probably ever known. And all of this occurred as a result of one angel's failure to keep his act together with the Lord!

For whatever reason, Satan let the spirit of pride and arrogance seep into his mindset and way of thinking. And once this spirit of pride and arrogance got to the point of starting to blind him to the big picture truths they were all living with – then it was only a matter of time before he would literally decide to act on it and go for all the marbles himself.

And once he made his final and fatal move with the Lord, that was going to be it. God pulled the plug, and he, and all the rest of the angels who tried to rebel with him, were all forever cast out of this perfect heavenly environment. Satan and all of the rest of the fallen angels who rebelled with him are now lost for all of eternity – and their final destination will be the Lake of Fire and Brimstone where they will all be thrown into at the end of the Millennium Kingdom with Jesus.

And to think that the catalyst that caused all of these events to occur was the spirit of pride! This is why the Lord is specifically telling us in the above verses that pride will come before the fall – and in this case, we are talking about the most extreme kind of fall imaginable – falling from heaven itself with no chance of ever being able to make it back in!

***This is why all Christians have got to stay on top of this particular negative quality. If the spirit of pride can take out one third of the entire angelic host from the third heaven where God lives – then it can do the exact same thing to all of us living on this lower plane of existence. And we see it happening every single day down here on this earth.***

Day in and day out, someone who has let the spirit of pride get the best of them is committing acts of murder, robbery, rape, adultery, thefts, scams, corporate fraud, and mismanagement of funds and money, etc. As a result of the spirit of pride totally blinding them, they think they are perfectly justified in committing some of these evil acts to begin with. And then to top it off, they think they are too smart to ever get caught by the criminal justice system. And for some, they will get away with some of these crimes and never be caught by the law in this lifetime. But then they forget one simple little thing.

It will only be a matter of time before they physically die and cross over – and when they do, they will all have to meet God the Father Himself for a personal judgment. And for many of them, this judgment will be causing the greatest fall of all if they have not been saved before they had died – the fall into the pits of hell, and then eventually the fall into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone after the Millennium has taken place, where they will

then spend the rest of their eternal lives with Satan and all the rest of his fallen angels.

To watch this kind of scenario play itself out, day in and day out, is just gut wrenching. To think that so many of these people have become so blinded by their own pride and arrogance that they will no longer listen to God or anyone else who may want to try and help them out. Unbelievable!

Now here are the two main verses from the Old Testament giving us this story about Satan and how he managed to completely fall from the love and grace of God the Father. The third verse is from the Book of Revelation, which will tell us that a third of the heavenly angels were also cast out with Satan.

**1. "You were the seal of perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.** You were in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering: the sardius, topaz, and diamond, beryl, onyx, and jasper, sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you were created.

***You were the anointed cherub who covers; I established you; you were on the holy mountain of God; you walked back and forth in the midst of fiery stones. You were perfect in your ways from the day you were created, till iniquity was found in you.***

By the abundance of your trading you became filled with violence within, and you sinned; therefore I cast you as a profane thing out of the mountain of God; and I destroyed you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the fiery stones.

Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you corrupted your wisdom for the sake of your splendor; I cast you to the ground, I laid you before kings, that they might gaze at you.

You defiled your sanctuaries by the multitude of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trading; therefore I brought fire from your midst; it devoured you, and I turned you to ashes upon the earth in the sight of all who saw you. All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you; you have become a horror, and shall be no more forever." (Ezekiel 28:12-19)

**2. "How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning!** How you are cut down to the ground, you who weakened the nations!

**For you have said in your heart: 'I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God; I will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the farthest sides of the north; I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.' Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, to the lowest depths of the Pit.**

Those who see you will gaze at you, and consider you saying: 'Is this the man who made the earth tremble, who shook kingdoms, who made the world as a wilderness and destroyed its cities, who did not open the house of his prisoners?' (Isaiah 14:12-17)

**3.** "And another sign appeared in heaven: behold, a great, fiery red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. **His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and threw them to the earth.** And the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her Child as soon as it was born." (Revelation 12:3-4)

Satan was called Lucifer before he rebelled and was cast out of heaven. Lucifer means "**light bearer.**" The name Satan means "**adversary.**" As a result of his fall from heaven, Satan goes from being a light bearing, anointed cherub to now being an enemy of God Almighty Himself!

Also notice that Satan was not born evil or wicked. The first verse says that he was the seal of perfection, that he was full of wisdom and perfect in beauty, and perfect in his ways from the day he was actually created by God. The Bible also tells us that he was literally allowed to walk on the mountain of God Himself, and that he might have been able to walk very close to where God's actual throne is located.

And then it happened – sin and iniquity was found in him. The Bible does not tell us how long of a period of time there was from the time that he was walking right before God until he started to sin and transgress.

The nature of the sin appears to have been something to do with the trading opportunities that the Lord must have given to him. The above passage tells us that somehow violence started to rise within him as a result of the abundance of those trading opportunities. The word "abundance" is telling us that Satan must have been very profitable with these trading opportunities. My guess is that all of this wealth and success must have started to go to his head.

The very first part of the first verse says he was covered with precious and valuable stones, and then it goes on to state what each one of these stones were. He was thus walking in some kind of significant wealth and prosperity. This verse also tells us that he had a certain number of sanctuaries under his rule, as it says that he then ended up defiling a

certain number of his own sanctuaries by some of the sins and iniquities he was committing.

Besides letting some of this wealth and prosperity start to get the best of him, the first verse then tells us that pride definitely started to enter into him when it says that his heart was **"lifted up"** because of his beauty. From that position, it then says that his wisdom started to get **"corrupted"** – and all of this was starting to occur as a result of the initial **"splendor"** he was walking in.

***Put all of the above together, and it would appear that God the Father greatly blessed this angel with a profitable trading business and a significant amount of wealth and prosperity. But as a result of all of this significant abundance, pride started to enter in – and he then started to focus and concentrate too much on his own beauty, knowledge, wisdom, and his own glorious splendor.***

The second verse then takes us one step further into what happened next. It was bad enough that Satan was starting to corrupt from all of the wealth and prosperity that God had initially blessed him with. But then he had to see if he could start to expand and enrich his own personal territory. And what does he try and target next – the throne of God Almighty Himself!

The wording in the second verse then tells us that Satan literally wanted to exalt his own personal throne above the throne of God. And not only did he want to personally exalt his throne to this unreachable height, but then it states that he wanted to **"be like"** the Most High God Himself! Not only are we talking total, complete, and open rebellion against God – but now we are talking complete and utter blasphemy against the Lord, to literally think that he could become like God Himself!

And no sooner does Satan reach this point of no return with the Lord that he then gets cast right out of heaven! The first verse tells us that Satan was then cast out of heaven as a **"profane thing"** and that he shall be **"no more forever."** In other words, Satan no longer exists in the eyes of God. He is now totally lost forever and he will never, ever have another chance to get back into the good graces of our Lord and Savior.

When God the Father says you no longer exist in His eyes as far as He is concerned when He says you shall be **"no more forever"** – God is pronouncing the most extreme judgment that He possibly can on a created being.

And to think that this created angel went from being a beautiful, wise, perfect, and anointed cherub to being cast right out of heaven with God telling him that he will no longer exist in His eyes. **We are talking about**

**a created angelic being falling from one of the highest mountain peaks anyone could ever hope to walk on down to the lowest level that anyone can be cast down into.**

At this time, Satan is still allowed to roam in the air in the second heaven. But once Jesus comes back to set up His Millennium Kingdom, Satan will first be cast into what is called the Bottomless Pit. And then after the 1000 year Millennium Kingdom has ended, Satan will then be cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone where he will then remain forever and ever with the rest of his fallen angels and the rest of all unsaved humanity that has ever lived.

And not only did Satan manage to get himself thrown out of the third heaven, but the third verse above also tells us that he somehow managed to get a third of the angels to get cast out right along with him when it says that his tail **"drew"** a third of the stars from heaven and threw them down onto the earth. I think the key word to focus on is the word **"drew"** – that Satan somehow managed to draw a third of these angels into his plan and scheme to try and exalt himself and his own personal throne above the throne of God.

***To think that this one highly intelligent and beautiful angel could corrupt to such an extreme degree to where he thought he could literally overthrow our God the Father – and then to think that he could try to become just like Him – has got to be the greatest miscalculation and blunder any created being has ever made.***

***For the life of me, I simply cannot understand how Satan could have become so blinded and so deluded to think that this was even a possibility to begin with. Once you examine and analyze all of the above facts of this angel's downfall – there can be no question that the spirit of pride had to have played a major part in his own personal corruption and eventual downfall.***

I believe that his spirit of pride was so blinding and so distorting his view of the big picture, that he literally thought he could get away with trying to overthrow the Lord Himself – much in the same way that Saddam Hussein thought he could stand up and engage with the strongest military might in the world. Again, another major miscalculation and blunder as a result of the spirit of pride totally blinding him as to what the real truth was that was staring him right in the face.

I believe this is why God is telling us in the above verses that the spirit of pride, haughtiness, and arrogance will come right before the fall and destruction of one's own personal life.

## Conclusion

The spirit of pride cannot only come after and enter into those who are working in higher positions of leadership and authority, but it can also come after and enter into anyone else – including any Christian. Christians especially have to really watch out for this deadly and infectious enemy.

What happens to some Christians after they initially get saved and start growing in the Lord is that some of this new found knowledge and power starts to go to their heads. All of sudden, they start looking **“down”** on unbelievers who are not saved, and other Christians who are not walking in the same knowledge levels they are walking in. All of a sudden they start to feel **“superior”** to anyone else. They start thinking they have all the answers to everything and that they are never wrong.

And before they know it, they have elevated themselves onto a platform and they are now looking **“down”** on the rest of the world. They have now become their own little god where everything revolves around them and their own agendas. All of sudden they no longer need to listen to the leadings of the Holy Spirit. They start to become so self-sufficient in their own tunnel vision, they no longer need the Lord or anyone else to tell them what to do with their lives or how to live it.

They start to ignore and pull away from the convictions of the Holy Spirit. Their ego and pride can no longer handle any type of constructive criticism, even if that constructive criticism is coming direct from the Lord Himself. And before they know it, they have lost all touch with their real friends, along with God Himself pulling away from them and letting them run as far as they want to run.

And then it happens. With all of their good support structures now gone with God and their real friends pulling back from them, their own imperfections finally catch up with them, and their house of cards all of a sudden comes crashing down on them and they end up losing it all. For some, it will mean the loss of their marriages and good friends. For others, it will mean the loss of their good jobs or ministries they had going with the Lord.

This type of scenario can play itself out across all walks of life. You see this kind of scenario occurring in marriages, friendships, and in all levels and segments of the workplace.

The reason that so many of their good friends will start to leave and abandon them is because no one wants to be around someone who is operating in the higher levels of this spirit. No one wants to be around



someone who is always looking down on them trying to make them feel inferior all the time.

If God Himself will start to pull away and become "afar" from a prideful person as one of the above Scripture verses is telling us – then you can bet that most people who are not submissive doormats will have the exact same type of reaction. This is why the spirit of pride is such a killer. It kills anyone and anything that attempts to get close to it.

And the deadly thing about the spirit of pride is how slowly and methodically it can start to work itself up into a person's mindset and personality. Satan was not born with the high levels of pride that eventually lead to his downfall. This kind of pride was built up in him over a certain period of time.

How many of us have seen people start out on their ladder of success with the Lord with very humble and submissive spirits, and then all of a sudden half way up that ladder pride starts to enter in – and now they no longer need God or any of the other good supportive relationships that they may have had with their spouses, children, and good friends.

This kind of train wreck can not only occur with those working in the higher positions of leadership and authority in this country, but it can also happen to anyone else, no matter what level of society they are living and working in. No one is immune from this deadly enemy, especially in the type of world we live in today where the pursuit of money, power, and fame is the only thing that some people think about and chase after.

The fall of some of the major corporations in our country is another good example of the spirit of pride in full operation and the devastating effects that it can have on all those who are close to it. Many people have lost all of their life's savings in some of these companies as a result of the greed and pride that was operating in some of the CEO's of these companies.

***This is why the Lord is really sounding the alarm with the way He has worded all of the above verses. When God the Father says that the spirit of pride will come right before a fall – you know He is trying to give all of us a major warning that this deadly spirit has to be stopped dead in its tracks before it even has a chance to wrap itself around our mind and way of thinking.***

***The spirit of pride has to be dealt with very early on before it starts to grow too far and too big into our thought process. This is why the Lord is really emphasizing that each and every Christian enter into this sanctification process with Him so the Holy Spirit can start to take control and help you***

***stay on top of your game as you continue to grow in the grace, knowledge, power, favor, and blessings of the Lord.***

***God blessed Satan with incredible amounts of wealth and authority – and look what happened – he could not stay humble and appreciative of those blessings. And once he started to take his eyes off the real source, God the Father, he then started to look on his own beauty and on his own wisdom, literally to the point that he thought he could become like God Himself.***

***Though we can all look at this story from the outside and wonder how anyone could have been so stupid to think they could become like God Himself or to try and literally overthrow Him – realize that once this spirit gets a real foothold into your mind and thought process – it has a very subtle way of being able to alter and distort your view and perception of reality. And once it has grown into any kind of full fruition in your mindset, you can become totally blinded to any kind of real truth.***

I will leave you with one very good verse that puts all of this in proper perspective. This verse is telling us that we should not be **“boasting”** about tomorrow because we have absolutely no idea what is going to be happening to us tomorrow. And not only do we have no idea on what is going to happen to us tomorrow – we don’t even know what is going to happen to us in the next two minutes, much less what is going to happen to us in the next 24 hours.

As a result of the curse of Adam and Eve that is still in full operation on this earth, we all have to live with a certain amount of uncertainty in this life, never knowing when or how we are going to die, never knowing when we may get sick or be involved in a bad accident, or never knowing when we may lose our job or our marriages. Anyone of us at anytime can get hit with a torpedo shot straight from the pit of hell itself.

This one basic fact alone should help keep each and everyone of us totally humble and accountable in our walk with the Lord. It is only by the grace, power, and protection of God the Father that we can even begin to make it through this life in one piece. This is why Jesus has told us that without Him we can do no absolutely nothing in this life!

Now here is another good verse to burn into your memory banks.

***“Do not boast about tomorrow, for you do not know what a day may bring forth. Let another man praise you, and not your own mouth; a stranger, and not your own lips.”***  
***(Proverbs 27:1)***

Once again, the Holy Bible is giving all of us incredible pieces of revelation and knowledge on how to properly walk and live in this life with all of the verses put together on just this one subject.

## The Sin of Adultery

I know this next topic is going to be a very sensitive one for many in the Body of Christ. Not only are there many unbelievers who are engaging in this sin and transgression against God, but there are many Christians themselves who are violating and breaking this one specific commandment from the Lord.

With the sexual imagery that is now invading our lives from just about every media outlet, many people are battling serious problems with lust. And instead of getting their sexual needs properly met in their marriages, many people are looking outside the boundary lines of their marriages for sexual fulfillment. As a result, you have many Christians who are out cheating behind their spouse's back and are literally sinning and transgressing against God Almighty Himself.

I cannot even begin to count the number of Christians I have personally met throughout the course of my life who have regularly cheated on their spouses. I have heard many of the men say that their lower half has no conscious, and if they find a pretty or willing woman, that there is no way they could ever say no or pass it up.

Others are not getting their sexual needs met or fulfilled within their marriages. Communication has shut down for different reasons, and as a result, their love life starts to get shut down right along with everything else. As a result of not getting their sexual needs properly met, many of these men start to wander, and before they know it, they have fallen head first into a hot and torrid adulterous affair.

For those of you who really want to know what God the Father thinks about this particular sin, I will give you some very interesting verses from the Bible letting you know exactly what He thinks about this transgression and why it is so deadly in His eyes.

As with all of the rest of the commandments God has given to us through His Holy Word – these specific verses are being given to us for our own benefit and for our protection. Many Christians I have met who are operating in this transgression on a regular and frequent basis have no real fear of the Lord or any respect for His specific commandments on this issue.

As you will see when I list out the specific verses on this topic, this is a very serious offense against the Lord, and many of His own will be becoming in for some very severe judgments on this issue once they depart from this life and cross over into the Judgment Seat of Christ for their own

personal judgment with the Lord for everything they have ever done or said in this life, whether it be good or whether it be bad.

Consider the following:

- ***God has the sin of adultery listed as one of His special 10 commandments – “Thou shall not commit adultery.”***
- ***God says that the sin of adultery will be one of the main sins that will keep you out of heaven. I will give you two verses below that will show you that adulterers will not be entering into the kingdom of heaven. Does this edict include Christians? Can a Christian possibly lose their salvation over this one sin by the way these verses are worded if his transgressions in this area have been deemed to be severe enough by the Lord?***
- ***The Bible says that God hates divorce, but that He will allow one spouse to leave the other within a marriage union if one of the spouses has been unfaithful to the other.***
- ***Back in the Old Testament, the sin of adultery warranted receiving the death penalty by way of stoning if one got caught in it.***
- ***Back in the Old Testament when God’s chosen people, the Jews, were abandoning Him and chasing after other gods – God the Father would call them “harlots and adulterers” because they would not stay true, loyal, and faithful to Him. When God calls you an “adulterer” straight to your face in your own personal relationship with Him, you are being called one of the worse things that He can possibly call you.***

I personally believe that there is an “**angle**” on this particular sin that many Christians are not seeing or realizing. Not only are you hurting yourself, your marriage, your spouse, and your children with this deadly sin and transgression, but you are also seriously hurting and damaging your own personal relationship with the Lord Himself.

Here is the angle that many Christians who are regularly operating in this *sin are not seeing*:

***If you cannot stay true, loyal, and faithful to your spouse, to your marriage, and to your children – then maybe God will wonder whether or not you could ever stay true, loyal, and***

***faithful to Him for the rest of your eternal existence once you enter into heaven.***

***Satan and one third of the angels could not stay loyal and faithful to God for the long run, and look what happened to all of them – they all got cast out of heaven with no chance of ever being able to make it back in again.***

***The Jewish people back in the Old Testament could not stay true, loyal, and faithful to the Lord in all of His dealings with them, and again, look what happened to all of them as a nation and as a people near the end of the Old Testament. God called them harlots and adulterers, pronounced judgment on them, and tells them that they will be dispersed to the four corners of the globe until the end of time where He would then bring them back to Israel and re-establish them as a nation.***

***I believe that marriage, and the vows and promises that go along with it, are taken very, very seriously by the Lord – and from there, He will personally watch you as to how you handle the sanctity of your marriage, how you treat your spouse and children, and if you will be tempted to stray and cheat behind your spouse's back.***

***Too many people end up taking their marriages for granted after a certain period of time. I believe marriage, and the close personal relationships that should develop between husband and wife, and between parents and their children should only be second to their own personal relationships with the Lord. It should be God, family, and friends – and in that order!***

Family – with a beautiful wife or husband, and with one or more beautiful children, are the greatest blessings and treasure that God can bestow upon you in this earthly life next to Him, His Son Jesus, and His Holy Spirit. And yet as great as this blessing and treasure really is, there are so many people who are willing to discard it, sever it, and cheat on it once they hit a few minor speed bumps in the marriage.

To those of you who are married and are either thinking about committing adultery behind your spouse's back, or if you are already doing it – study the wording, the tone, and the straight forward messages that are coming out the verses I will list below. Study these verses very, very carefully. Once you read these verses, you will have been properly warned by God Himself through His Word, and you will know, without any other possible interpretation, exactly what God the Father's opinion really is on this issue.

Bottom line – if you are having any problems in your marriage, commit your life and your marriage back into God the Father’s hand, and ask Him to help heal, restore, and straighten out any thing that needs repairing. Be guided by the Holy Spirit as to what steps you should be taking on your end to get the marriage back on solid ground with you, your spouse, and with God. Tackle your problems and issues head on, operating under God’s knowledge, guidance, and wisdom.

Jumping into any kind of an adulterous affair will only make matters worse, and eventually could lead to the complete destruction and dissolution of your marriage if your spouse ever finds out about it. The pain you will cause your spouse and children will be extreme, traumatic, and possibly fatal and final if the transgression has been deemed to be severe enough by your spouse.

***If God has completely severed His personal connection to Satan and one third of the angels due to their infidelity and rebellion against Him, and if He will allow a full marriage union to be completely broken, severed, and dissolved if one of the spouses becomes guilty of committing adultery – do not tempt the fate of your married life for a few moments of fleshly and carnal pleasure. The gamble and the risk is simply not worth it – either for you, your spouse, or your children.***

Now on to some very interesting verses from Scripture as what God really thinks about this specific sin and transgression.

## **1. Thou Shall Not Commit Adultery**

Without question, the very first verse to be considered has to be the command God the Father gave Moses when He was giving him the 10 commandments – where one of the specific commandments was: **“Thou shall not commit adultery.”**

***When God the Father goes to the length and intensity to meet with this one man on the top of a mountain to personally give him 10 specific commandments engraved on a tablet of stone – you know that each one of these specific commandments should be taken very, very seriously.***

These 10 commandments should not be trifled with or taken for granted in any way, shape, or form. And with God the Father Himself personally writing on a tablet of stone **“thou shall not commit adultery,”** you know we are dealing with a very serious warning from the Lord on this issue.

***Bottom line – adultery is forbidden territory for any Christian to be crossing over into and should be avoided at all costs. If it is not, and you do not pull out of it within a reasonable length of time and get this sin confessed and forgiven under the Blood of Jesus, you will have to face the Lord for a personal judgment on this issue when you meet Him face to face at His Judgment Seat.***

Here is this powerful one-line command given direct to us from the mouth of the Lord Himself. This is coming from the verse where all 10 commandments are being given to Moses:

***And God spoke all these words, saying: "I am the Lord Your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before Me ... You shall not commit adultery ..." (Exodus 20:1-14)***

When God the Father tells us that we should not be committing adultery, this should be the end of the discussion. God says what He means and means what He says!

## **2. Adultery is a Sin**

Since God is commanding all of us in the above commandment not to be committing adultery – what this now means is that if we do it, then we have now committed an actual sin and transgression directly against Him. So not only are we hurting ourselves, our spouse, and our own children with this kind of unfaithfulness, but we are also hurting, grieving, and sinning against God Almighty Himself.

By not being willing to stay true, loyal, and faithful to our spouses, I believe God Himself is hurt and wounded when He sees this kind of transgression occurring in a marriage – and I have to wonder if He is wondering if that adulterer will also forsake and abandon Him sometime in the future if they could not stay loyal and faithful to their original marriage vows and promises.

The very first verse I will list below is telling us that the person who knows to do good and does not do it, to him it will be counted as an actual sin. In other words, if God is telling us as one of His 10 commandments that He does not want any of us to be committing adultery, and we know that, and then we go ahead and violate and break His command anyway – then this transgression will be counted as a sin against us. And then if we do not see the errors of our way on this issue, confess this sin out before God and receive His forgiveness for it, then we will be judged accordingly for this transgression at the Judgment Seat of Christ when we die and cross over.



Here are 3 very good verses on sinning willfully against the Lord, and what the consequences could be if we do not get this sin and transgression dealt with very early on with both God and our spouse:

1. ***"Therefore, to him who knows to do good and does not do it, to him it is sin." (James 4:17)***
2. ***"Let no one say when he is tempted, "I am tempted by God," for God cannot be tempted by evil, nor does He Himself tempt anyone. But each one is tempted when he is drawn away by his own desires and enticed. Then, when desire has conceived, it gives birth to sin; and sin, when it is full-grown, brings forth death." (James 1:13)***
3. ***"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Romans 6:23)***

Notice in the second verse that it is telling us that God will never tempt us with anything that is evil and not right in His sight. If God is telling us not to be committing adultery, then this means He will never lead or authorize us to even consider committing any kind of an adulterous act behind our spouse's back.

I have come across some well meaning Christians who actually thought that God was leading them into the adulterous affair they had fallen into. Their marriages had severely deteriorated over the years, but instead of going direct to God and committing the marriage back into His hands and ask for His guidance, knowledge, and wisdom on how to heal and repair the broken marriage, they assume they now have the right to look for and find happiness in the arms of another lover.

And then it happens as the last two verses are telling us – some kind of death will end up occurring as a result of this sin. Either the other spouse finds out about it and files for divorce because of the transgression, or the spouse will try and stay in the marriage to give it one more chance, but now their faith and trust in their spouse has been severely shaken, and sometimes it will then take years to get that same level of trust built back up into the marriage, if it ever does.

Again, this specific command from the Lord not to be committing adultery is being given to all of us for our own good. For those of you who have been on the receiving end of it, you know what kind of extreme pain and heartache this kind of sin will cause, and the damage that it will do to the love, faith, and trust of the marriage.

### 3. Abstain From Fleshly Lusts Which War Against the Soul

When people commit adultery, they are usually doing it for one of two main reasons. They are either trying to find true love in another person and are out looking for an actual love affair, or they are doing it for just pure lust, sexual gratification, and pleasure.

Many adulterous men I have met are out chasing other women behind their wife's back, and the only reason they are doing it is for the challenge and thrill of being able to get another woman to go to bed with them. They make no bones about it. They are not looking for any kind of true love. The only thing they are looking for is immediate gratification of their sexual and lustful desires.

To many of these men, it is nothing but a game, and they do not care who they hurt or wound in the process – whether it be their wives if they ever find out about it, or the women they are seducing into their lustful, carnal, and primal world.

To any Christian man or woman who is out committing adultery for the pure lust and sex of all of it, study the wording in these next set of verses very carefully. The very first verse I will list is telling us that we have to try and abstain from fleshly lusts that will war against our souls. And one of the fleshly lusts that it is definitely referring to is the temptation to want to chase after other partners for the pure sex and lust of all of it.

The second verse then puts the icing on the cake when it tells us that any man who attempts to join himself sexually with another woman considered to be any kind of a harlot before the Lord – that he will become as **“one body”** and **“one flesh”** with her.

God is telling us in this very intense verse that our physical bodies have not been made for sexual immorality, but have been made specifically and solely for Him. This is why God will not condone any kind of sexual activity outside the bounds of holy marriage. Our bodies have only been made for the Lord and the one that He will want us to marry in this life – they were not meant for anyone else.

This second verse is also telling us that God is wanting us to literally **“flee”** from any kind of sexual immorality. In other words, run for the hills if you are ever faced with the temptation of it.

Here are two very strong verses on this issue:

1. **"Beloved, I beg you as sojourners and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul ..." (1 Peter 2:11)**
  
2. **"Now the body is not for sexual immorality but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body ... Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ and make them members of a harlot? Certainly not! Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is one body with her? For "the two," He says, "shall become one flesh." But he who is joined to the Lord is one spirit with Him. Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body, but he who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body. Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own? For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's." (1 Corinthians 6:13)**

This second verse is a real mouthful! With our physical bodies now being the temple of the Holy Spirit Himself as a result of our conversions to the Lord, God simply does not want any of us getting contaminated and tainted by sexually joining forces with any other people outside the bounds of holy marriage.

***This verse is very graphically and very strongly telling us that we have now become members of Jesus Christ – and as such, God does not want us becoming members with any harlots!***

***So not only are we sinning against ourselves and our own spouse when we commit adultery, but we are also sinning directly against God and the spiritual union that we now have with Him as a result of having the Holy Spirit living on the inside of us.***

***If more Christians would consider this angle of an adulterous act – that our bodies now belong to the Lord, and that any kind of adulterous act with another person will be contaminating our spiritual union with the Lord – I think more Christians would think twice before engaging in any type of adulterous behavior.***

I believe the way the Lord is wording some of these verses, that any kind of an adulterous act with another is also a form of defilement in His eyes,

and that He is deeply grieved and hurt when He sees any of His own engaging in it.

#### 4. The Mouth of an Immoral Woman is a Deep Pit

These next four verses will add perfectly to the ones just listed above. These next verses are giving us major revelation from the Lord for those who like to chase after women who are considered immoral – women who have no qualms about sleeping with whoever they want and not caring if these men are married or not.

Even though God is telling us in these verses what will happen to men if they fall into the beds and arms of these kinds of immoral women – I also believe this same principle applies to women falling for the wrong kind of immoral men – who again, have no qualms about sleeping with whoever they want too, with all of it being for their own sexual gratification and pleasure.

**These kinds of immoral men and women are your fatal attractions.** Watch what the Lord has to say about these kinds of people, and what these kinds of people could end up doing to your life if you should ever fall into their traps and snares:

1. ***"The mouth of an immoral woman is a deep pit; he who is abhorred of the Lord will fall there." (Proverbs 22:14)***
2. ***"My son, give me your heart, and let your eyes observe My ways. For a harlot is a deep pit, and a seductress is a narrow well. She also lies in wait as for a victim, and increases the unfaithful among men." (Proverbs 23:26)***
3. ***"Do not let your heart turn aside to her ways, do not stray into her paths; for she has cast down many wounded, and all who were slain by her were strong men. Her house is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death." (Proverbs 7:25)***
4. ***"For the commandment is a lamp, and the law is light; reproofs of instruction are the way of life, to keep you from the evil woman, from the flattering tongue of a seductress, do not lust after her beauty in your heart, nor let her allure you with her eyelids. For by means of a harlot a man is reduced to a crust of bread; and an adulteress will prey upon his precious life. Can a man take fire to his bosom, and his clothes not be burned? Can one walk on hot coals, and his feet not be seared? So is he who goes in to his neighbor's wife; whoever touches her***

***shall not be innocent ... Whoever commits adultery with a woman lacks understanding; he who does so destroys his own soul.” (Proverbs 6:23, 32)***

Notice the first three verses are telling us that an immoral harlot is a deep pit, and that many men have fallen into her pit and have had their lives totally ruined and destroyed as a result.

The third verse is telling us that many **“strong men”** have been **“slain”** by her and her ways. We all know what happened to Samson. God anointed this man with probably one of the greatest physical strength anointings that any man may have ever received from Him – and one woman by the name of Delilah was able to find the source of that strength and completely take it away from him in a matter of minutes. One woman accomplished what a whole Philistine army could not do. If that is not perfect proof of what a fatal attraction could do to your life, I don’t know what is!

Notice some of the very strong and intense wording that the Lord is using to show what a fatal attraction like this could do to your life:

- **For by means of a harlot a man is reduced to a crust of bread**
- **She lies in wait for her victim and increases unfaithfulness among men**
- **An adulteress will prey upon his precious life**
- **Whoever commits adultery ... destroys his own soul**
- **Her house is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death**

When God uses the words that this kind of fatal attraction **“is the way to hell”** and that anyone who crosses over with her **“destroys his own soul”** – He is giving all of us a maximum intense kind of warning!

God even goes so far as to throw in a couple of very intense statements when He says that can a man take this kind of fire to his bosom and not get his clothes burned, or can he try and walk on hot coals without getting his feet seared?

I have met many men and women who have been horribly burned by other lovers who were just playing them for the sex they were able to give them. Once these types of players start to tire and bore of you, they will then trade you in for their next new conquest, and you will then be left with either broken hopes and dreams if you are not married, or your own marriage will be left in a state of total shambles if you were doing this as an act of adultery behind your spouse’s back.

Again, God has given all of us more than enough fair warning of the dangers that could lie just around the corner with this sin with the way that He has worded all of these verses.

## 5. God Will Be Judging All Adulterers

Not only will adultery get you in trouble in this life with both the Lord and your mate if you start cheating on them – but you are also going to get into big-time trouble with the Lord after you die and cross over to meet Him face to face for your own personal judgment.

Some men and women are so clever and so good at keeping their adulterous behavior from their spouses, that they will literally go their entire lives never getting caught or even suspected of cheating by their spouses. However, our life down here on this earth is for just a very short period of time. Sooner or later, we will all depart from this life, and when we do, every single of us will come before the Judgment Seat of Christ for our own individual personal judgments.

The very first verse I will list below will tell us that God the Father will be judging all fornicators and adulterers in this life – no exceptions. The last two verses I will list are both telling us that adulterers will not be entering into the kingdom of heaven. Are these two verses talking about Christians as well as unbelievers? Is it possible for a Christian to lose their salvation if the adulterous behavior has been deemed to be severe enough by the Lord?

In the Current Issues section of our site, we have another article titled, “Can a Christian Lose Their Salvation?” In this article, I give you several good verses that will show you that it might be possible for a Christian to lose their salvation if any of their unconfessed sins are deemed to be bad enough and severe enough by the Lord.

***With God listing the sin of adultery as one of His specific 10 commandments, with God stating that the house of a harlot will lead to hell and the destruction of one’s soul, and with God listing the sin of adultery as one of the sins that can keep you from entering into heaven – I would not want to be tempting my eternal fate with the Lord on this issue.***

***As I stated at the top of this article, maybe God is wondering if you cannot stay true, loyal, and faithful to your spouse and to your marriage vows and promises – then maybe you will not be able to stay true, loyal, and faithful to Him for the rest of your eternal existence once you enter into heaven.***

Satan and one third of the fallen angels all lived up in heaven with God initially, but they could not stay true, loyal, and faithful to Him for the long run. As a result, they all got cast out, and they will never, ever get another chance to get back in again!

We obviously will not know for certain whether or not the sin of adultery, if deemed to be severe enough by the Lord, can possibly cause someone to lose their salvation. But with the way all of the above verses have been worded, along with the tone and intensity of some of the wording in these verses, I would not want to roll the dice with the Lord on this issue, thinking that He will turn a blind eye and not really care about it if you decide you want to start playing the field behind your spouse's back.

Carefully consider the wording in these next three verses:

1. "Marriage is honorable among all, and the bed undefiled; **but the fornicators and adulterers God will judge.**" (*Hebrews 13:4*)
2. "**Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God?** Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, **nor adulterers**, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God." (*1 Corinthians 6:9*)
3. "**Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are: adultery**, fornication, uncleanness, licentiousness, idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, dissensions, heresies, envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like; of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, **that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.**" (*Galatians 5:19*)

Notice the last verse says that those "**who practice such things**" will not be getting into heaven. The words that those who "**practice**" such things – is that possibly referring to a Christian who engages in adulterous behavior on a regular and frequent basis, with no remorse, and no intentions on confessing this sin out before the Lord for His mercy and forgiveness?

## 6. Blessed is the Man Who Endures Temptation

I will leave you with one last very consoling verse on this whole issue. As I said at the top of this article, as a result of the sexual onslaught that we all have to face on an everyday basis with what is coming at us from just

about every possible media outlet, many Christians are battling serious problems with lust.

This next verse will tell us that blessed is the man who **“endures temptation”** – and if that man can endure any kind of temptation by staying out of it, he will then have been **“proved”** to the Lord and will thus receive a crown of life.

When God is using the word **“endures,”** to endure temptation, He is letting all of us know that we will all have to face a certain amount of temptations in this life to want to try and cross over into forbidden areas. It is not the temptation that will cross our path that will cause us to sin and get us into trouble with the Lord – it is what we do with that temptation and how we act and respond to it that will cause us to fall and sin.

Many men will have very pretty and seductive women that will cross their path in this life. Adam and Eve had the one tree they were supposed to stay off in their perfect garden. But instead of “enduring” the temptation and not giving in to eating any of the fruit that was on it, they succumbed to the temptation with the help of Satan, and as a result, they fell and lost it all.

Though Satan was the one to initially set the ball in motion by trying to convince and persuade them to eat off this forbidden tree, God still held Adam and Eve personally accountable and responsible for their treasonous act.

In the same way, none of us will be able to blame anyone else before God on our day of judgment with Him if someone else may have seduced us into having an adulterous affair with them. God will hold all of us personally accountable and responsible for succumbing to any of these kinds of heavier temptations, no matter how much someone else may have tempted and persuaded us to cross over with them.

For those of you who are battling any kind of heavier temptation on issues such as these, grab a hold of the wording in this next verse:

***“Blessed is the man who endures temptation; for when he has been proved, he will receive the crown of life which the Lord has promised to those who love Him.” (James 1:12)***

Life is rough with all of the temptations, trials, and tribulations that we all have to face from time to time. But God has made it very clear through His Word on how we are to handle these types of adversities and temptations. He expects all of us to become good soldiers and overcomers in Him – no matter what life, hell, or the devil may try and throw our way.



## Conclusion

For those of you who are engaging in this sin on a very regular and frequent basis, I will leave you with one last warning.

All of the above verses are telling us exactly what God's opinion is on this issue. There is no other spin or interpretation you can try and put on any of the these verses. They all mean exactly what they are saying.

Adultery is a sin and transgression direct against the Lord Himself, and this sin will eventually be judged either in this life or the next life to come if it is not dealt with down here by going direct to God, confessing it out as a sin, and asking Him for His mercy and forgiveness. This sin can be fully forgiven. This sin is not any type of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

***No matter how long you have been operating in this sin, no matter how many lovers you have had behind your spouse's back – there is still total forgiveness, healing, and restoration for you in your own personal relationship with the Lord.***

***God will fully forgive you if you are truly willing to come before Him with a repentant heart, be willing to admit the errors of your ways, and be willing to confess this sin out for the sin and transgression that it really is before Him.***

However, for those of you who do not want to give this sin up for whatever your personal reasons may be, realize that all of the above verses have given you more than enough fair warning. You will not be able to plead ignorance on this issue before the Lord on your day of personal judgment with Him. Even unbelievers and heathens know that adultery is some kind of sin and transgression that will do nothing but eventually bring death to their marriages, to their spouses, and to the children in the family.

Per the article we have titled, "Can A Christian Lose Their Salvation?" – the sin of adultery is definitely listed as one of the sins that will be able to keep you from entering into heaven. Whether or not the verses on this issue are referring to sinning adulterous Christians who are stubbornly and steadfastly refusing to pull out of this sin in this lifetime remains to be seen.

But by the way these verses are being specifically worded by the Lord, I would not want to roll the dice and take my chances that the mercy and grace of Jesus Christ will cover me for this transgression if I have stubbornly refused to pull out of it within a reasonable length of time

down here on this earth. And not only will you be gambling with your eternal fate with where you may end up at once you die and cross over, but you are also gambling with the fate of your own marriage should your spouse ever find out about it this side of heaven.

The pain this particular transgression will cause in a family unit once it has been found out and exposed is **extreme and traumatic**. For those of you who have been on the receiving end of it, I am sure you can testify that it is one of the worse pains that you can ever feel or experience in this life. It feels like someone is taking a knife and just ripping and tearing the inside of your guts right out of you.

And not only will this sin and transgression personally tear your spouse apart, but it will also severely hurt and wound the children in your family if you have any. They will feel hurt and betrayed, and the entire underpinnings of the family unit will be shaken to its very core. Adultery, when fully exposed, will be a spiritual earthquake that will hit a family with full force, and no one will get out of it without receiving some type of emotional injuries and scarring.

***So not only are you sinning against your own body with your body being the temple of the Holy Spirit, and not only are you sinning directly against the Lord Himself in your own personal relationship with Him, but you are setting up the rest of your family for a fall of the worse kind if they ever find out about it.***

***There is simply no upside or advantage for wanting to remain in this sin. Sooner or later you will be called out on it and exposed – either in this life or the next to come.***

***God will eventually have your hide on this transgression. God will only give you a certain amount of rope to run with and a certain amount of time before He calls you out on this and pulls you in for some type of judgment.***

And not only are you tempting your fate with God and your marriage, but you are also tempting the fate of your physical life. We just recently received an email from a man who was living in a very good and wonderful marriage. However, for whatever his personal reasons were for it at the time, he ended up having a one night stand with another woman.

As a result of crossing over into forbidden territory even for just that one time, he ended up getting infected with AIDS. And to make matters worse, not knowing that he was infected with AIDS, he ended up infecting his wife with it. Now they are both going before the Lord asking Him for His mercy, healing, and forgiveness on the situation.

One of the things you will find is that the liberal media is not reporting on how rampant and prevalent sexually transmitted diseases have now become in our world today. We now have many more kinds of sexually transmitted diseases than we have ever had before. And new and different types of strains are developing all of the time. And in many of these strains, there are still no known cures.

In other words, if you get infected with some of these different types of strains, you will have it for the rest of your life, and in some of these cases, you will end up dying and leaving this earth much sooner than maybe the Lord would have really liked. I wonder how many Christians are departing from this life before their time would have really been up in the Lord as a result of the deadly consequences that arose from crossing over into this sin and transgression?

With all of the different types of strains of sexually transmitted diseases that are now out there, you are literally playing Russian roulette every single time you decide to cross over with another partner. You will be sleeping with everyone else they have ever slept with in their past, and all it will take is for you to end up being with the wrong person at the wrong time.

***You are literally entering and playing in a land mine field every single time you decide to cross over to engage in this sin – never knowing when one of those land mines will go off and explode right in your face – thereby possibly ruining and destroying your marriage, damaging your personal relationship with your children, severely affecting your personal relationship with the Lord as a result of sinning directly against Him, possibly endangering your own salvation with Him – and then to top it off, possibly infecting yourself with a sexually transmitted disease that will have no known cure!***

***When you really chew on all of the above negative consequences that can occur with this sin – there is simply no upside or advantage to wanting to remain in it or cross over into it in the first place other than the quick, immediate, sexual pleasure and gratification it will initially bring. But is all that temporary, fleeting, and passing sexual gratification really worth all of the negative and destructive consequences that this sin can unleash in your life?***

***Any Christian with half a brain who knows God and understands His ways and His commandments, should never, ever tempt their hand with Him by being willing to cross over this kind of forbidden territory. There are simply too many Christians who are engaging in this sin with no fear of the***

***Lord and with no fear of His commandments and judgments on this issue.***

***God knows exactly what He is doing. Since God is totally and completely perfect in His nature and personality, then He completely and perfectly knows what is in all of our best interests much better than we do.***

***And when God the Father goes to the extreme length to personally engrave a specific command on a tablet of stone in that He does not want any of us committing adultery – then you know we are dealing with a very serious issue and command from Him – and this command should never be taken lightly or for granted – no matter what the rest of the heathen world may try and tell us with its refusal to want to accept any kind of moral absolutes in their life and how they want to live it.***

Our God is a very loving, merciful, and caring God. He has nothing but our best interests at heart with all of the specific commandments He has given to us in how we are to live in this life. These commandments are all being given to us for our own good and for our own protection.

God is giving every single one of us perfect knowledge and revelation on this issue from all of the above verses. However, the ball is now back to each and every Christian. All God can do is tell you from His Word what He is expecting from each one of us on this particular transgression.

Adam and Eve were given total free reign by God to abide by His one specific command to stay off that one tree and they could not do it. As a result, they brought down severe judgment not only on them, but the rest of the human race that would follow after them. Sin of any kind will always have some kind of negative consequence and repercussion to it, and the sin of adultery is no exception.

Once again, God the Father has given us some very good advice and insight from His Word as to why this specific sin and transgression is so deadly in His eyes.

## The Sin of Fornication

I know this next topic is going to be a very sensitive one for many single Christian men and women. Due to the laxness of our society, and no one wanting any kind of God or moral absolutes telling them what they can and cannot do in this life, we have many people, including many Christians, who are engaging in the sin of fornication.

If there is one sin that many people do not want to give up in this day and age because of the extreme sexual and physical pleasure that it brings along with it, it has to be the sin of fornication.

Many single Christians I have talked with over the years who were doing this with their steady partners all told me that since they were not married yet, they were hoping that God would cut them some "slack" in this area, turn a blind eye to it, and allow them to at least have this one vice in their life since they had no idea how much longer it would be before they got married.

Other Christians, especially men, were literally chasing after many women, not just one steady partner, and they were having sex with whoever they could find at the time. Many professional Christian business men I had worked with were doing this on a regular basis. Some were married and some were not. But in either case, they were not willing to give up this sin even though they knew what the Bible had to say about it. They said their sexual desires were just too strong and they just flat out did not want to give up this particular sin for the Lord.

***For every single Christian man and woman who is out there still committing this sin – the 50 million dollar question now becomes – will God cut you some slack on this sin and turn a blind eye to it due the laxness and permissiveness of our society – or does He mean exactly what He is saying in the Scripture verses I will give you below?***

***I think once you study the verses I will give you below, you will see that God is meaning exactly what He is saying in His Word on this topic, and He will not be turning a blind eye to this sin or cutting anyone any slack for wanting to stay in it. As you will see in some of these verses, God is using some very intense language to describe what He thinks of this sin and the consequences of this sin if one does not confess, repent, and pull out of it within a reasonable period of time.***

I will first start out by giving you the key verses from Scripture on this sin, and then point out and highlight some key statements God is making

in these verses. I will then end this article with some commentary on this sin, as over the last 2-3 years we have received many interesting emails from people all over the world on this particular sin.

## The Scripture Verses

Before I get into the actual Scripture verses, here are some basic definitions from some of the different Bible Dictionaries on exactly what this sin is in case you were not sure what the word "**fornication**" actually meant:

- **Sex relations between the unmarried**
- **Sexual relationships outside the bonds of marriage**
- **Unchastity, sexual immorality – refers to every kind of illegal sexual intercourse, that is, any intercourse except that between a husband and wife**
- **Voluntary sexual intercourse of an unmarried person with someone of the opposite sex**

As you can see from the definitions on what this word means, God has it set up that sexual intercourse can only be done between two married people in a heterosexual union. The act of sexual intercourse was never meant to be done outside the bonds of holy matrimony.

***As Christians, not only must we love God, serve God, and follow His perfect plan and destiny for our lives, but we must also follow all of His ways for our lives. And the Bible is fully loaded with all of the ways of God so we know exactly what we can and cannot do in this life. And no matter how you try to slice and dice the issue of fornication, it is simply outside the will of God for our lives.***

As you read these verses below, you will see there is no way to spin or re-interpret these verses. Once again, they are all very straight forward and they all mean exactly what they are saying.

Here are 9 very good verses from our Bible on what God's opinion really is on the subject of fornication:

1. "For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, **murders**, adulteries, fornications, false witness, blasphemies. These are the things which defile a man, but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile a man." (*Matthew 15:19-20*)
2. "Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. **Neither fornicators**, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor

thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners **will inherit the kingdom of God.**" (*1 Corinthians 6:9*)

3. "But fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not even be named among you, as is fitting for saints; ... For this you know, **that no fornicator**, unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, **has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God.**" (*Ephesians 5: 3-5*)
4. "Now the works of the *flesh* are evident, which are: adultery, **fornication**, uncleanness, licentiousness, idolatry, sorcery, hatred, contentions, jealousies, outbursts of wrath, selfish ambitions, *dissensions*, heresies, envy, murders, drunkenness, revelries, and the like; of which I tell you beforehand, just as I also told you in time past, **that those who practice such things will not inherit the kingdom of God.**" (*Galatians 5:19*)
5. "Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ and make them members of a harlot? Certainly not! Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is one body with her? For "The two," He says, "shall become one flesh." But he who is joined to the Lord is one spirit with Him. Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body, but he who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body. Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own? For you were bought at a price; therefore glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's." (*1 Corinthians 6:15-20*)
6. "For this is the will of God, your **sanctification**: that you should abstain from sexual immorality; that each of you should know how to possess his own vessel in **sanctification** and honor, not in passion of lust, like the Gentiles who do not know God ... For God did not call us to uncleanness, but in holiness." (*1 Thessalonians 4:3-7*)
7. "Therefore put to death your members which are on the earth: fornication, uncleanness, passion, evil desire, and covetousness, which is idolatry. Because of these things the wrath of God is coming upon the sons of disobedience, in which you also once walked when you lived in them." (*Colossians 3: 5-7*)
8. "... and lest, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and I shall mourn for many who have sinned before and have not repented of the uncleanness, fornication, and

licentiousness which they have practiced.” ( *2 Corinthians 12: 21*)

9. “I wrote to you in my epistle not to keep company with sexually immoral people. Yet I certainly did not mean with the sexually immoral people of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, since then you would need to go out of the world. **But now I have written to you not to keep company with anyone named a brother, who is a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a reviler, or a drunkard, or an extortioner – not even to eat with such a person.**” ( *1 Corinthians 5: 9-11*)

Notice the following key statements being made in these verses:

**1.** The very first verse is flat out telling you that fornication will **“defile”** a man. What exactly does the Bible mean when it says that this sin will defile a man? Here is the definition of the word **“defile”** from some of the different Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries:

- **Making the pure impure**
- **To make ritually or unethically unclean**
- **To make common**
- **To render unholy, unclean**
- **To make foul**
- **To make filth or dirty, pollute**
- **To corrupt, to violate the chastity of, *deflower***
- **The vices of the ungodly which contaminate a person in his intercourse with the world**

As you can see from some of these definitions, the word **“defile”** is a very strong and intense word being used by the Lord to tell us exactly what the sin of fornication will do to all of us if we engage in it.

With this first verse telling us that the act of fornication will actually defile us, I find it hard to believe that God will want to cut us any slack on this sin and agree to turn a blind eye to it due to the permissiveness of our society, or due to the fact that every one else is doing it. The word **“defile”** is simply too strong of a word being used by the Lord, and I thus do not think He will agree to turn a blind eye to it like so many single Christians think He will do.

**2.** In the next three verses, God really turns up the heat where He lists the sin of fornication as one of the sins that will keep you from being able to enter into heaven. Are these three verses only talking about unbelievers, or is it also including Christians who are engaging in this sin on a regular basis and who do not pull out of it and get it forgiven under



the blood of Jesus before they die and cross over? We obviously will find out once we get to the other side.

But with the way these three verses are being worded, fornication is obviously a very serious sin and offense against God, and I would not want to be tempting my eternal fate with Him on this issue.

**3.** The 5th verse above adds more to all of this when it tells us that not only are we sinning against God, but we are also sinning against our own bodies when we commit this sin. It then goes on to point out that our bodies are now the temple of the Holy Spirit and that when we do commit this sin, we are becoming **one body and one flesh** with the other person we are having sex with.

The 6th verse then adds more to this when it tells us that God wants us to be **sanctified** in His site. He is calling all of us to **holiness** and He wants all of us to **abstain from any kind of sexual immorality**. He wants all of us to remain **clean and pure**.

The act of fornication will do just the opposite – it will make us unclean, unholy, and impure in the eyes of God, and that is not a place you want to be in with the Lord if you truly love Him and want to serve and follow Him in this life.

**4.** The very last verse I have listed above is one that really stunned me when I first read it. In this verse, the apostle Paul is telling us to basically shun our brothers who are operating in this sin. He is telling us that we should not even eat with them. You can also tell that he is talking about our Christian brothers and sisters, not unbelievers, when he uses the word “brother.”

I know in this day and age, this would be a very hard command to obey, as we all know and have some single Christian friends who are fornicating with their steady partners.

The only other thing I will say about this last verse is that if God is relaying this kind of intense message where He does not want us eating and associating with people who are fornicating, then you know this is a very serious sin and offense in His eyes, and that He does not want any of us engaging in it for any reason whatsoever.

When you put all of these verses together, one right after the other, there can be no doubt in anyone’s rational mind what God’s opinion really is on fornication. Once again, in a bolded numbered format, here are what the above verses are telling us in no uncertain terms.

***The sin of fornication:***

- **Will defile us and cause us to become unholy and unclean in the eyes of God**
- **Will cause us to sin against both God and our own bodies**
- **Will cause us to become one body and one flesh with the person we are fornicating with**
- **Will be one of the specific sins that will keep people from being able to enter into heaven**
- **And to top it all off – God will not want His own people associating with people who are engaging in this sin**

As I said at the top of this article, many single Christians I have talked with about this sin are hoping that God will cut them some slack on this sin due to the fact that everyone else is doing it and our society has become so much more lax and permissive in its moral standards.

But if you believe the Bible is God's true Word to all of us, there is simply no way you can sugarcoat the above verses. Not only are these verses all very straight forward, but once again, God is using some very intense and strong language in these verses. This intense and strong language being used by the Lord is His big **"tell"** to all of us as to what He really thinks of this sin and how serious it really is in His eyes.

Thus any Christian who truly loves God and wants to serve and follow Him in this life will be willing to give up this sin until they get married.

## **Conclusion**

Again, I know this particular topic is a very touchy and sensitive one for many today, especially in the lax and permissive times we are now all living in. As we all know, fornication brings with it extreme physical pleasure, and for many, it is very hard to give up once you start to engage in it.

But with all of the above Scripture verses being very clear on what God's opinion really is on this sin, any Christian who truly loves God will be willing to give it up for Him. When the above verses are telling us that this specific sin will actually defile us and cause us to sin against both God and our own bodies, there is simply no other way or angle to look at this sin from. There thus can be no rational justification for any single Christian to remain in it.

My brother Chris just recently married his mate 2 years ago. They dated for two years before they got married and they both made a pact and vow with both themselves and with God that they would not have sex until after they got married due to what God's Word had to say on this issue. And to this day, they are both really glad they did it. They feel God has blessed them as a result of doing this and nothing but good has come out of it as a result.

The other thing that we have noticed is that we have been receiving many more emails from people all across the world on this issue over the last 2 years or so. And in each one of these cases, God was moving very strongly on each couple to pull out of this sin until they got married.

The Holy Spirit was really moving with strong conviction on each of these people. As a result, many of these single couples were pulling out this sin, as they wanted to obey the Lord and not displease Him. When they did, they felt an incredible sense of peace come upon them for listening to the Lord's instructions on this sin.

***The Bible says that Jesus will be coming back for a Bride that will be without spot or blemish. And in order for that to happen, the Holy Spirit is going to have to be moving on many people to get them to clean up their acts and any obvious sins they are still living in. And fornication is definitely going to be one of the sins the Holy Spirit will be moving on in the coming years ahead if any single Christians are still engaging in it.***

## Do Not Covet Your Neighbor's Goods

When the Bible tells us that God is [no respecter of persons](#), what this means is that we are all on an equal footing with the Lord – we are all equal in the eyes of God. This means that He loves each and everyone of us equally and unconditionally.

However, as we also know, we are not all equal down here on this earth in the way that material wealth and goods are distributed out to each one of us in this life. Some people will get more of the money and material blessings of this life than other people will.

As a result of how the money and material goods are distributed out in this life, many countries have divided people up in the terms of upper class, middle class, and lower class, with the people in the upper class having more of the material goods and wealth of this world than the middle and lower class will have.

Then as a result of the way some people will have more of the material wealth and goods of this world, many people who do not have this same kind of wealth and goods coming their way will then start to get very jealous of the people who do. They start envying, desiring, and coveting all of the goods and wealth that their neighbors, friends, and family members have that they do not have.

As a result of this kind of intense coveting, they then come into **direct violation** of one of the 10 commandments given to us by the Lord where He tells us not to be coveting anything that our neighbor may have that we do not have.

Once again, here is this most powerful verse from our Bible, which is the very last of the 10 commandments given to us by our Lord. It is the 10th commandment.

***"You shall not covet your neighbor's house; you shall not covet your neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor ANYTHING that is your neighbor's." (Exodus 20:17)***

The key word to pick up on in this verse is the word "**covet**." The word "**covet**" means the following from some of the different Bible Dictionaries:

- **An insatiable desire for worldly gain**
- **An inordinate desire to have more**

- **The inordinate desire to possess what belongs to another, usually tangible things**
- **An ungoverned and selfish desire that threatens the basic rights of others**
- **The desire to have something for oneself that belongs to another, a *craving* or passionate desire**

The second key thing to pick up from this verse is the very last part of it where it tells us that God does not want us to covet **"anything"** that our neighbor has that we do not have. The word **"anything"** is an all-inclusive type of word and this verse should thus be interpreted very literally.

However, as we all know, especially in the very materialistic type of world we live in today, this tenth commandment is a real hard one to try and abide by.

If we are all really honest with ourselves, many of us have probably been in violation of this tenth commandment to some degree during the course of our lives. How many times over the years have you been jealous of some of the things your neighbors, friends, or even some of the members of your own family had that you did not have?

Many of us have been jealous over such things as a new car, a new wife, a new house, a new wardrobe, a new job, or a new promotion that someone may have received while we were left standing with nothing coming in on our end.

If we are Christians when some of this starts to happen to us, we then start to feel left out and forgotten. We feel that the Lord has forgotten about us and that He does not really love us or care for us since everyone else is getting so much more in the area of material wealth and goods than we are. From there, our feelings will get hurt and we will then start to pout and feel sorry for ourselves.

However, as we grow older and get more mature in our walk with the Lord, we gradually start to see that all of this material wealth and goods in this life is really irrelevant in respect to how God has the big picture set up for our lives. We come to realize that not one ounce, not one penny of our neighbor's goods will be going with them to the other side once they die and cross over.

As we have said before, no suitcases will need to be packed on anyone's death bed. The only thing that will be leaving on your deathbed is your soul and your spirit. Everything else will be staying completely behind – left to either rot and perish, or left to those who you love and trust.

If you still find yourself getting too jealous of what others may have in this life that you do not have, study very carefully the three verses I will now give you. I have talked about these three verses in my article titled, "Godliness With Contentment is Great Gain." But for the purposes of this article, I want to once more restate each one of them for you so you can get a real grip on this problem.

These three verses in particular should be kept front and center in every believer's walk with the Lord, especially since we all have to face the daily temptation of wanting more of the material things in this life.

- 1. "Let your conduct be without covetousness, and be content with such things as you have." (*Hebrews 13:5*)**
- 2. "Not that I speak in regard to need, for I have learned in whatever state I am, to be content: I know how to be abased, and I know how to abound. Everywhere and in all things I have learned both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need. I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me." (*Philippians 4:11*)**
- 3. "But *godliness* with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and clothing, with these we shall be content. But those who desire to be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and harmful lusts which drown men in destruction and perdition.**

***For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. But you, O man of God, flee these things and pursue righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, gentleness." (1 Timothy 6: 6-11)***

The very first verse says it all when it tells us that our conduct in this life should be without any type of covetousness, and that we should learn how to be perfectly content with what we already do have in the Lord.

Then in the second verse, the apostle Paul really drives this point home even further when he tells us that we should always be perfectly content in the Lord no matter what kind of state we may find ourselves in – whether we are abounding or abasing. In other words, learn how to be content in the Lord even during the worse of times as well as the best of times, as God will always be there to help you get through any bad times you may have to face in this life.

Then in the third verse, the apostle Paul adds the following, **“For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.”** Again, no suitcases will need to be packed on your death bed. This is why you should never get too caught up with what material wealth and goods your [friends](#) and neighbors may have that you will not have in this life.

If you do not get a good grip on this problem and get it properly taken care of with the Lord, it could then end up robbing you of much of your peace and joy in the Lord.

It is extremely important that you get this commandment properly worked into your mindset with how you look and view things in this life. If you do not, you could end up getting too mad and frustrated with God with how He is working and building up your life in Him. And from there, you could literally end up taking yourself right out of the divine destiny that He has set up for your life.

Again, in the type of day and age we all now live in, this particular commandment is a real hard one for many to try and abide by. With the incredible advances we have now made in the area of technology, we now have many more toys and goodies that we can buy than we have ever had before in the history of the entire world. Computers, high-definition TV's, cell phones, cars, fancy and expensive houses, and different types of clothes all having us thinking about the next new material thing we can buy.

If one of our friends has bought the latest wide-screen TV, computer, or cell phone, we then have to try and keep up and buy the same thing. And then once that product goes out of style, we then have to buy the newest and most up-to-date model in order to always have the best and the latest, especially if those around us are always doing it.

As a result of trying to keep up with your neighbors and friends in the area of material goods, you are coming into direct conflict with what God is wanting from all of us in the above verse. You are constantly coveting what your neighbor has that you do not have, and God does not want you living your life like this, as all it will end up eventually doing is making you miserable and unhappy.

***If you live long enough in this life, then sooner or later you will find out that all of the wealth and material goods of this life will not give you true happiness, joy, and fulfillment in this life. Only finding Jesus, and then entering into a true personal relationship with Him will give you the joy, peace, happiness, and fulfillment that you are really looking for.***

***All of the material goods you can buy in this life will not give you that kind of joy, peace, and contentment. All of the material goods in this life will do nothing but end up leaving you dead, lifeless, and empty on the inside once everything is all finally said and done on your life. And again, not one ounce of anything that you have bought or saved up for will be going with you to the other side once you die and cross over.***

***If you want to really find and experience true happiness, joy, peace, contentment, and fulfillment in this life, then look to find it in your personal relationship with the Lord. Do not look to find it in the world or the material things of this world. If you do, you will end up being bitterly disappointed, not to mention losing whatever God's perfect plan and destiny would have been for your life.***

***You only have one chance to get it right and fully accomplish what God will be wanting you to do in this life. Do not waste and squander your one and only opportunity to complete whatever God's perfect will and plan is going to be for your life.***

As we have shown you in our article titled, "Rewards in Heaven," God will be rewarding you for the **works and labors** that you will be doing down here on this earth for Him. God will not be rewarding you for any type of works that you end up doing just for yourself or your own selfish ambitions, or for any type of wealth or material goods you have managed to accumulate for yourself.

As such, make sure you always keep your priorities straight and continue to see the big picture as to how God sees it. Do not ever compare your life and where it is going with the Lord to anyone else's life and where they are going with the Lord.

Each fully surrendered Christian is on their own unique and individual journey with the Lord, and you should never compare where you are going with the Lord and what material goods He has brought into your life to where they are going and what material goods they have in their life with the Lord.

If you start becoming too envious and jealous of what others have in this life that you do not have, then you will start coming into direct conflict with the above 10th commandment – and that is not a place you want to be at in your own personal relationship with the Lord. This life is way too short to be constantly worrying about what others may have that you do not have – especially with **none of it** being able to go with you once you die and cross over into heaven.



## Conclusion

Once again, our Lord has given us a very powerful revelation from His Word with this 10th commandment. Now, more than ever, we really need to grab a hold of this revelation and get it worked into our walk and mindsets with the Lord.

Over the years, many Christians have had their lives totally ruined due to abandoning the Lord and chasing after worldly and fleshly pursuits instead of staying with the divine plan that God had already set up for their lives.

How many lives and ministries have been brought down as a result of chasing after the material and lustful things of this world rather than chasing after what God was wanting to do with their lives? We have seen quite a few of these train wrecks over the years, and a lot of it may have started as a result of some of them coming into direct violation of this 10th commandment.

***Remember – what your neighbors, friends, or family members have that you do not have has no bearing or significance with what God will be wanting to do with your life. If you have fully surrendered your entire life into the Lord's hand, He will then guide you into the divine destiny that He has set up for your life. And once God starts to guide you into your divine destiny, He will then start to bring in every little thing you will need in this life to properly fulfill that call.***

***And once that starts to happen with the Lord, be very happy and very content with whatever the Lord does bring into your life. Do not compare what He brings into your life with what anyone else has in their life, especially in the area of wealth and material goods. If you do, all it will end up doing is robbing you of your peace and joy in Him.***

***Again, this life is simply way too short to let this happen to you, as your peace and joy in the Lord is something that is extremely important in your walk with Him. Lose your peace and joy in the Lord and you could easily get yourself knocked right out of your divine destiny with Him, as you will then be more easily tempted to want to chase after the other worldly things in this life instead of chasing after the Lord and His perfect plan for your life.***

This is how many great men and women of God have fallen over the years, all as a result of them being seduced by the world and all of the material and lustful pleasures it has to offer. This is why God has told us

in His Word that we will literally become His enemy if we ever become too friendly with the world and the ways of it.

Again, notice what the apostle Paul has said at the end of the third verse above:

***"For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness ..." (1 Timothy 6:10)***

This is why the Lord has made sure to make this one of His very special commandments. He knew that once we started to covet what our neighbors and friends had that we did not have, that it would not be long before the actual love of money would then start to get a real hold on us and from there, knock us right out of divine calls and personal relationship with Him.

This verse is a major bone-chilling verse, as it shows us how easily we can lose our relationship with the Lord, along with everything else we have built up-to-date with Him.

When the apostle Paul tells us that the love of money can actually cause greediness to occur in us and from there, **cause us to want to stray from the Lord**, this is a major red flag and warning for all of us and we should take this warning very, very seriously, as the **love and pursuit of money** has brought down too many men, women, marriages, ministries, businesses, and governments all across the world over the years.

Once again, God the Father knows exactly what He is talking about when He lays down these kinds of commandments for all of us to abide by in this life.

## For Riches Are Not Forever

**I**n this article, I want to give you 11 very strong verses on the riches that this world has to offer, and how we as Christians have got to keep a proper perspective on how material wealth and money will fit into God's overall divine plan for all of our lives.

If God has a certain amount of money and material wealth in His perfect plan for your life so you can use it to properly work for Him and advance His kingdom, then it is absolutely imperative that you realize where all of this money is coming from in the first place – from God Almighty Himself – and to make sure that you do not ever let any of this money and some of the power that will come with it go to your head and start to pull you away from God and with what He wants to do with your life.

There is nothing that can bring a man, a woman, a marriage, a ministry, or a company down faster than letting any kind of material wealth go straight to your head and puff you up with any kind of pride, arrogance, and greed.

Once all of that money and wealth starts to go to your head, it won't be long before pride, arrogance, greed, and the lust and love for money will start to seep up into your personality and mindset. And before you know it, you will then start to forget where all of that money had come from in the first place and what it is to be used for – and you will then think that you will no longer need to do things God's way since you now have full possession of this money. You will now start to use all of this money for your own gain and profit rather than using it for what God will want you to use it for.

***How many of our modern day ministries have been completely brought down as a result of the leaders allowing all of the money they have received pollute and corrupt them, and then caused them to totally misuse it for their own gain and profit rather than using it to properly advance the ministries that God had given to them to build up?***

If not properly handled, money and the love of that money can become like a cancer where it will start to slowly eat away at your soul and your personal connection with the Lord. The Bible tells us that it is not the money itself that is the root of all kinds of evil, it is the **love** of that money that is the root of all kinds of evil.

One of the main reasons money can have such a bad effect on our personalities is due to the Adamic curse that is still in full operation on this earth. As a result of Adam and Eve's one transgression against the

Lord, we all now have to work for our food and shelter in this life. What we work for are wages, and those wages are paid to us in the form of monetary currency. And if we do not receive this money on a regular basis in our daily lives, we know we can lose our shelter and food supplies in this life very quickly.

For many people, they are only one or two paychecks away from being totally homeless in this life. As a result, we all have a full appreciation of money and how important it is that we receive our daily ration of it, for without it, we could lose everything we have.

Money then gets tied into our self-preservation instincts and it now becomes to our soul what blood is to our human bodies. Our bodies cannot live and function without our blood moving through them, and in the same way, we cannot live and operate in this world unless we have a certain amount of money flowing into our checking accounts.

Money is also like the oil to the car engine. Run out of oil and your engine will immediately shut down. Run out of all of your money and you could be totally homeless in a matter of days. When you see all of the homeless people that are still out there on our streets, you realize that but for the grace of God that could be you out there due to how unpredictable our lives can be in this fallen and cursed world, and how fast tragedy and misfortune can hit anyone of us at a moment's notice.

Since we all know we need a certain amount of money flowing into our lives so we can properly live and work in this life, it is not too hard to see how money can then start to really mess some of us up.

As Christians, there is simply only one way to look at money and how it is to be used and handled in this life. As we have said before in many of our other articles, there is only one way to live this life, and that is under a full and complete surrender to God the Father. It is our job to fully submit our lives into the hands of God the Father so He can then place us into His perfect divine plan for our lives.

And once we make that full surrender to the Lord, He will now become our real Employer. He will now be the One who will decide what kinds of wages we will be making on the jobs that He will be giving us, along with when we will be promoted and how much money He will want us to actually have in this life. **God will now be the One controlling the purse strings in our lives, and He will now be the One to decide how much money and material wealth He will want us to be having in this life.**

Once God starts to release the amount of money He will want us to have in this life, it will be our job to be good stewards of that money and use it in the ways that He will want us to use it for. This money is being given

direct to us by God and we thus should be using it for whatever He will want us to use it for. We should not be looking at this money like it is really ours and that we can now use it for our own selfish purposes and agendas.

And this is where some of the real problems will start to occur. Instead of remembering where all of this money is coming from in the first place, we all of a sudden forget who this money is coming from and why it is being released into our lives in the first place.

We then start to take the money flowing into our lives for granted, and we start to think that all of this money is a direct result of our own hard work. We forget that God is really the One who is controlling the purse strings in our daily lives and that He is the actual source of this money, not us or any of our hard working efforts.

With God now being our real Employer, He will now be the One to decide how wealthy He will want to make us in this life. I know there are some who like to preach a very heavy wealth and prosperity message saying that God wants everyone to be wealthy in this life, but I do not believe this is how God has the big picture set up.

***Since God knows making some people very wealthy in this life could possibly ruin them, I believe He decides on a sovereign basis who He is going to make wealthy in this life and who He will not. I believe God sovereignly decides exactly how much wealth He will want to have flowing through each person's life.***

Some people God will want to bless with quite a bit of wealth, as they will need that wealth to run the kinds of ministries and businesses He will want them to run. But others will be called to do work that will not require a great amount of wealth, such as many of our missionaries who are working in foreign countries for very moderate if not minimum type wages.

Since God will be the One who will be running the money show for each one of our lives, we always have to keep all of this in proper perspective. If we don't, we could easily lose sight of the big picture and with what God wants to do with each one of our lives in the perfect divine plan that He has already set up for each one of our lives.

What gets so many people in trouble with the Lord is they start placing the money and the pursuit and acquirement of that money ahead of God and with what He wants them to use it for in their own divine destinies with Him.

They start running with the money, trying to use it for their own selfish agendas and purposes rather than using it in the way that God wants them to use it. Before you know it, they will have completely pulled away from God and the perfect plan that He had set up for their lives. And once they pull completely away from the Lord with all of their money in hand, it is not too much longer before they end up losing all of it, and then everything they had been trying to build up on their own comes completely crashing down on them.

Since God is only releasing this money into our daily lives so we can properly live, work, and function for Him, it is extremely important that we not let all of this money get the better of us and start to pull us away from God and the divine plan that He has set up for all of our lives.

These next set of verses will really drive home the point on how God wants all of us to look at money and the material wealth that either this world or God can offer to us, especially in the more affluent and wealthier type countries.

## The Scripture Verses

I will first list all of these verses one right after the other, and then point out some key phrases that we really need to grab a hold of so we do not ever let the amount of money that God will want to release into our lives ruin us or cause us to pull away from Him.

1. ***"For riches are not forever, nor does a crown endure to all generations." (Proverbs 27:24)***
2. ***"Treasures of wickedness profit nothing, but righteousness delivers from death. The Lord will not allow the righteous soul to famish, but He casts away the desire of the wicked." (Proverbs 10:2-3)***
3. ***"Riches do not profit in the day of wrath, but righteousness delivers from death." (Proverbs 11:4)***
4. ***"Wealth gained by dishonesty will be diminished, but he who gathers by labor will increase." (Proverbs 13:11)***
5. ***"A little that a righteous man has is better than the riches of many wicked." (Psalm 37:16)***
6. ***And He said to them, "Take heed and beware of covetousness, for one's life does not consist in the abundance of the things he possesses." (Luke 12:15)***

7. ***"The idols of the nations are silver and gold, the work of men's hands. They have mouths, but they do not speak; eyes they have, but they do not see; they have ears, but they do not hear; nor is there any breath in their mouths. Those who make them are like them; so is everyone who trusts in them."* (Psalm 134:15-18)**
8. ***"He who loves silver will not be satisfied with silver; nor he who lives abundance, with increase. This also is vanity. When goods increase, they increase who eat them; so what profit have the owners except to see them with their eyes? The sleep of a laboring man is sweet, whether he eats little or much; but the abundance of the rich will not permit him to sleep."* (Ecclesiastes 5:10-12)**
9. ***"Do not be afraid when one becomes rich, when the glory of his house is increased; for when he dies he shall carry nothing away; his glory shall not descend after him. Though while he lives he blesses himself (for men will praise you when you do well for yourself), he shall go to the generation of his fathers; they shall never see light."* (Psalm 49:16-19)**
10. ***Then Jesus said to His disciples, "Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God."* (Matthew 19:23-24)**
11. ***"For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows."* (1 Timothy 6:10)**

Whether we receive money direct from God in the divine plan that He has set up for our lives, or we receive money direct from the world system itself by running our own show and doing our own thing, all of these Scripture verses are telling us one very vital and important thing – and that is all of this money and wealth is very temporary in the big-picture, eternal scheme of things – and that every single ounce of it will eventually be pulled away from us at our deaths and departure from this world.

No matter how much money you make in this life, no matter how much money you end up saving, and no matter how many money-making enterprises you have built up for yourself, not one ounce of this fortune will be going with you to the other side once you die and cross over.

As we have said before, no suitcases will need to be packed on your deathbed, as all of your hard earned money will now be staying right there in the financial institutions that you have put it into, with all of it then being given to whoever you had willed it out to.

So you can get the revelation that is in the above Scripture verses solidly implanted and burned into your mindset with how you should be viewing and looking at all of the money that is flowing through this world, I am now going to bold and number some of the above key phrases. These key phrases should be kept front and center in your mind's eye so you do not ever let money and the love of that money come between you and God and with what God wants to do with your life.

- ***For riches are not forever, nor does a crown endure to all generations***
- ***Treasures of wickedness profit nothing, but righteousness delivers from death***
- ***Riches do not profit in the day of wrath***
- ***A little that a righteous man has is better than the riches of many wicked***
- ***Beware of covetousness, for one's life does not consists in the abundance of things he possesses***
- ***Wealth gained by dishonesty will be diminished, but he who gathers by labor will increase***
- ***He who loves silver will not be satisfied with silver, nor he who loves abundance***
- ***The sleep of a laboring man is sweet, whether he eats little or much, but the abundance of the rich will not permit him to sleep***
- ***Do not be afraid when one becomes rich ... for when he dies he shall carry nothing away, his glory shall not descend after him***
- ***It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God***
- ***For the love of money is a root of all kinds of evil, for which some have strayed from the faith in their greediness***



The first phrase that **riches are not forever** says it all. This is why I made the title of this article right off that verse. And then it follows up with the statement that a crown will not last to all generations.

In other words, no matter how many crowns you have gained, earned, or bought in this life, and no matter how many fleshly works you have done for yourself, none of it will matter on your death bed, since none of it will be going with you to the other side once you die and cross over. The only thing that will matter to the Lord is whether or not you had entered into His perfect will for your life, and then did a good job with whatever He had asked you to do for Him in this life.

Jesus Himself perfectly spells all of this out for us when He says that only those who do the **"will"** of God the Father will be the ones who will be entering into heaven.

Also notice where it says that he who loves silver will never be satisfied. How many of the wealthy people in this life are unhappy, unfulfilled, and are on anti-depressants and having to see shrinks all of the time because they are so miserable with all of their wealth and the type of lifestyle their money has bought them.

Hollywood is living proof that money, power, and fame will not bring you true inner peace, happiness, and joy. Only having a true personal relationship with our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ can bring you true inner peace, happiness, and joy in this life, not all of the money of this world and all of the material things this money can buy you.

The very last verse states that it is the **love** of money that is the **root** of many kinds of evil, and that this love for money has caused many people to stray from the Lord, as their love for the money has made them greedy and lustful for it. In other words, money has now become their god, and they have now placed money and the pursuit of it before God and with how He wants them to use it for their lives.

How many of our politicians, managers, and CEO's of companies have all started out with real good intentions, but over a period of time fell too much in love with the money and trying to make more of it. And then after a certain period of time, they ended up falling completely away from God and with what He was wanting to do with the rest of their lives.

With money being such a powerful stimulant to our mind and our senses, it is not too hard to see how so many people in this life can let it get the better of them and cause them to be able to literally pull away from God Himself and the divine destiny that He had already planned out for their lives. Money, and material wealth and goods can become a very seductive and deadly trap for you if you do not use it in the way that God will want you to use it.

As a result of how easily money can corrupt all of us, Satan and his demons love to try and play the **"lust for money game"** on whoever they can. Without question, money and the love and lust for it, has brought down too many marriages, companies, ministries, and governments all across the world throughout history, and continues to do so to this very day, as so many of us still have never learned the lessons from our past on this issue.

## Conclusion

All of the above verses from our Bible perfectly lay out for all of us what the big picture is really all about when it comes to money and all of the material wealth this world has to offer.

***Bottom line – just fully surrender your entire life into the hands of God the Father and ask Him to place you into His perfect plan and destiny for your life. From there, just proceed forward and go to work for the Lord with whatever He will be asking you to do for Him in this life. If you do, then God will be the One who will control the purse strings in your life and the exact amount of money He will want you to have flowing in your life, along with when this money will be released into your life.***

***If you can do all of that, then all of the worry and anxiety about money will be taken out of your life, as you will know that you will be working full time for God and that He will now be the One who will be fully supporting you in this life. And in that divine support system that you will be receiving from the Lord will be all of the money that you will ever need so you can fully accomplish all of your divine destiny for Him.***

God will now become your true Employer in this life, not the people you are working for in the different jobs God will be wanting you to work at for Him. God will now be the One to decide what your pay range will be in the different jobs that you will be working at for Him, along with when you will be promoted and how far up the promotion ladder He will want to take you in your divine calling for Him.

Once you really grasp that you will now be working for God, living for God, and dying for God, then you can learn how to [be anxious for nothing](#) and not always be worrying about tomorrow, because you will know that God already has tomorrow perfectly planned out for you with what He will be wanting you to do for Him.

The Bible tells us that the steps of a good man are **"ordered"** by the Lord. I believe that a step can represent each day in your life. If you are

walking in a true full surrender with the Lord, then He already has every single one of your days perfectly planned out for you. You are now on the yellow brick road with the Lord, with the yellow color on that brick road now being the light of God Himself.

Just follow the leadings of the Holy Spirit on a daily basis and you will then accomplish everything that the Lord will want you to do for Him in this life. And if you do your part for God by trying to accomplish His perfect will for your life to the best of your abilities, then God will do His part. And part of that will be to make sure that He fully supports you with the specific amount of money that you will need in this life so you can fully accomplish all of His perfect will for your life.

The verse that perfectly captures this big picture revelation is the following verse:

***"But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you." (Matthew 6:33)***

In one simple little sentence, God the Father perfectly solves the dilemma we all face about money and trying to make sure we always have enough of it flowing in our lives so we do not end up homeless and out on the streets.

Also notice in the second verse above that it says that God will not permit the righteous soul to famish. Again, it is God's job to keep us adequately supported in this life so we can properly work for Him in the divine plan that He has set up for our lives.

If God does not properly support us with what He will be asking us to do for Him, then there will be no way that we will ever be able to fully accomplish all of His divine destiny for our lives. God has to bring what money we will need in this life or else we will not be able to do everything that He will be wanting us to do for Him.

A good employer will always want to try and pay his employees a good and fair wage so he can motivate them to want to do a good job for him. It is the exact same way with God the Father. The Bible tells us that God is a rewarder of those who will diligently seek after Him, and some of those rewards can be financial type rewards.

But again, as fully surrendered Christians, we always have to stay on top of our money game with the Lord. Just remember where all of this money is really coming from, who is really controlling the purse strings in your life, and who you are living for and working for in this life. You are living and working for God in this life, not for yourself or anyone else in your life.

# God is Slow to Anger

Once you enter into a true full surrender with the Lord as we have explained to you in our article titled, "The Full Surrender," the first thing you will see occur is that you will start to draw much closer to the Lord in your own personal relationship with Him.

And in that good personal relationship you will develop with the Lord, you will then find yourself always wanting to be pleasing to Him. And in always wanting to be pleasing to the Lord, you will want to make sure that you are not missing anything that He is wanting you to do for Him, along with wanting to do your work for Him to the best of your natural, God-given abilities.

However, what can happen to some Christians as they start to draw closer to the Lord and enter into His perfect will for their lives, is they can then sometimes start to get too paranoid and neurotic in their own personal relationship with Him. They start making a few mistakes here and there, and then all of a sudden they start thinking the Lord is getting mad at them and not finding them pleasing enough.

Demons love to move in when they see this type of negative paranoid thinking starting to occur, and they will then add more fuel to the fire by trying to tell the person that God no longer loves them, that God no longer wants to work with them, and in some extreme cases, they will try and get the person to think they have lost their salvation with the Lord.

We have received many emails from people over the last 5 years who have this kind of negative paranoid thinking in their minds, and this was all because they had made a few simple little mistakes in their walk with the Lord.

Some Christians have also developed this type of unhealthy fear with the Lord due to reading some of the Old Testament. They start to see God as a God of judgment and wrath, and any wrong move they make on their end will end up bringing down the full wrath and judgment of God on both them and their lives.

Though our God is a God of judgment and wrath when the situation dictates that He manifest this part of His personality, there is also the good, loving, merciful, and tender side to His personality as well. As we explained to you in our article titled, "The Fear of the Lord," God has two sides to His personality – the loving, gracious, merciful, tender, and slow to anger side, and the side that will render judgment and wrath when it deserves to be released upon someone.

As born-again Christians, not only do we have the Holy Spirit Himself now living and operating on the inside of us, but we now have a direct connection back to God the Father Himself as a result of the blood that Jesus has personally shed for all of us on the cross. And knowing that we now have this kind of direct connection back to God the Father, some Christians start to get too afraid to approach Him for any kind of a close, intimate, personal relationship due to fear of the judgment and wrath side of His personality.

As a result of letting this kind of fear and paranoia get too much of a hold of them, they then start to pull away from the Lord. And before they know it, they have pulled themselves right out of His divine calling for their lives. And this is all due to them being too afraid to establish a close personal relationship with Him for fear that He will be getting mad at them for every single little mistake they will be making in this life.

To those of you who have fallen into this kind of negative and paranoid thinking with the Lord, there are 4 very good verses I will give you from the Bible that should help break this kind of unhealthy fear off you. I remember when I first saw these 4 verses at the beginning of my walk with the Lord years ago, it really helped to break this kind of unhealthy fear and paranoia off me.

***Once I realized that God was not going to render any type of major judgment and wrath against me for every single little mistake I would ever make in this life, that really freed me up to be myself in Him. And from there, freed me up to be able to live my life all out for Him.***

***And when I did make any mistakes along the way, I would confess them out as sins if they were sins against the Lord, and then I would seek to learn from those mistakes so I would not keep making the same mistakes over and over again.***

***Much of life is a trial and error learning process, and sometimes you can actually learn better by making mistakes and failing. And when you do make those mistakes, God will be all right with them as long as you recognize your mistakes and then seek to learn from them so you can continue to spiritually grow in Him.***

In this article, I want to give you 4 very good verses that will show you that God is "**slow to anger.**" And if God is slow to anger, this means He is not going to be getting mad at you for every single little mistake you will be making in this life. If He did, we would all be walking on pins and needles with Him and we would never be able to have any true peace and joy in Him.

Here are 4 major verses from the Bible that you really need to have burned into your memory banks so you do not ever let major fear and paranoia get too strong of a hold on you every time you make any simple honest mistakes along the way in your walk with the Lord.

1. "... But You are God, ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, **slow to anger**, abundant in kindness ..." (*Nehemiah 9:17*)
2. "The Lord is merciful and gracious, **slow to anger**, and abounding in mercy." (*Psalms 103:8*)
3. "Return to the Lord your God, for He is gracious and merciful, **slow to anger**, and of great kindness ..." (*Joel 2:13*)
4. "The Lord is gracious and full of *compassion*, **slow to anger** and great in mercy. The Lord is good to all, and His tender mercies are over all His works." (*Psalms 145:8*)

In every single one of these verses, they are specifically telling us that God is "**slow to anger.**" And if God is slow to anger, then we should all take God at His Word and not worry that we are going to get into major trouble with Him every single time we make a mistake on our end.

I have discovered there is some slack with the Lord for some of the stupid things we will end up doing in this life, as no one is perfect. The Bible has already told us that every single man and woman has sinned and fallen short of the glory of God.

But where we can get into major trouble with the Lord is when we start to try and push things past that slack line. Once we do, the Holy Spirit will then start to convict us and try to get us to pull back from what we are wanting to do. And if we keep ignoring His strivings and convictions and keep going in the wrong direction, then we could end up kindling the anger of God and cause Him to take some kind of corrective action with us.

Though we all have some slack with the Lord for all of our imperfections and frailties, this does not mean we can try and push the envelope with Him to see how much we can get away with. What God will be all right with are our **honest and simple mistakes** that we will be making due to our own human weakness and imperfections. What God will not be all right with is our **deliberate and constant sinning** when we know full well that we are going directly against Him and His ways with what we are wanting to do.

Just realize in your own personal walk with the Lord that He will be slow to anger with you, which means He will always have a lot of patience for any honest and simple mistakes you will be making along the way in your

journey with Him. God is not going to be an extreme taskmaster, beating you over the head for every single little thing you will be doing wrong in this life. If He did, we would all be too afraid to draw close to Him to establish any type of a close, intimate, personal relationship with Him.

However, do not ever try and take advantage of God's long fuse. Though God is slow to anger, He can still get angry if we end up pushing the envelope too far with Him. Per our article titled, "The Fear of the Lord," there are also plenty of verses showing that our God is not a God to be trifled with or taken for granted.

But unless you are getting into any type of unacceptable behavior and sins with the Lord, trust what the Word is telling you in that God really does have a long fuse and it really does take quite a bit to get Him to blow.

If you are walking in good stead with the Lord, trust that He will always have plenty of patience and love for you, and that He will not be getting mad at you for every single little thing you will do wrong in this life, as no one person will ever become the fourth person of the Divine Trinity.

## God Will Take You Back – No Matter How Far You Have Backslid

One of the most frequently asked questions we get coming through our site is whether or not God will take you back if you have really backslid from Him to any appreciable degree in this life.

We have many people who were saved earlier on in their lives, and then over the years grew further and further away from God as a result of chasing after their own fleshly pursuits and/or falling into various types of sins they knew were going against the will and ways of God.

Now many of them are at the end of their ropes. They have no where else to go and no one else to turn to. They know the ways they were following in this life were not the ways of God. They had made some serious mistakes with the way they were running and handling their own personal lives.

They know now that they should have turned the reigns of their lives over to the Lord the minute they got saved and from there, should have followed the leadings of the Holy Spirit on a daily basis so God could have led them into the perfect divine plan that He had already set up for their lives.

Now they look back and see how they have really blown it. Many of these people's lives are now in total shambles, with many of them now being flat broke, along with all of their marriages ending up in divorce.

Some of them are now in deep pits of despair and depression, feeling that there is no more hope for any of them due to the desperate straits they now found themselves in. God seems so far and so distant to many of them, that they feel there is no way that He would ever take any of them back again because they have simply pushed the envelope too far with Him with how they have handled and run their lives over the years.

***To any of you who are now in this state, I am here to tell you, that no matter how far you have backslid from the Lord, no matter how many bad and evil sins you may have committed against Him, He can still take you back and start all over again – no matter what your age, and no matter how bad your current condition is right now.***

***Not only is our God a God of big miracles, but He is also a God of second chances. God loves to take His people back when they have backslid from Him, build them up and fully***



***restore them again, and then place them on the path of His perfect will for their lives. It is never too late to start your show all over again with the Lord.***

In this article, I am going to give you three very powerful things that will prove to you, without any shadow of a doubt, that God will take all of you fully back if you will only reach out to Him and fully commit your entire life back to Him.

***There is a brand new life and a brand new fresh start for each one of you if you will only humble yourself before the Lord, confess out all of your known sins before Him, fully surrender your entire life back over to Him for His direction and handling, and then be willing to work with the Holy Spirit to start to clean up your life and any wreckage that has occurred over the years that you have backslid.***

***If God created our entire world in 6 days, then He will have no problems in being able to clean up your life and give you a brand new fresh start. If the Bible tells us that nothing is impossible with God, then there is nothing in your personal life that He cannot get properly cleaned up – no matter how dire and how hopeless things may look to you in the natural right now.***

***All you have to do is believe that God can do this for you, and then reach out to Him and ask Him to take you back – right as you are right now. If you do, God will then take you into the palm of His hand and start to bring you up and out of your broken and defeated life and begin to give you a brand new life in Him.***

***Again, no matter how many bad and evil sins you may have committed against the Lord over the years, He can still fully forgive you and fully restore you. You are not a lost cause and your current situation is not a hopeless situation. The blood of Jesus Christ can cover every single bad sin that you have ever committed against the Lord.***

Now I want to give you three very powerful things that you will really need to grab a hold of if you want to get God back in your life.

The first one is on the story of the prodigal son. Here is the passage from our Bible giving you the complete details as to what had occurred between a father and a son after he had left his father many years before. This story will apply to many of you right now who have backslid from the Lord over the years.

## 1. The Story of the Prodigal Son

Here is a very powerful story that you really need to grab a hold of so you can see how God the Father will do the exact same thing with each one of you – no matter how far you have backslid from Him, no matter how many bad sins you have committed against Him, and no matter how many years you have been completely away from Him. This passage is titled **"The Parable of the Lost Son."**

*"Then he said: "A certain man had two sons. And the younger of them said to his father, 'Father, give me the portion of goods that falls to me.' So he divided to them his livelihood. And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, journeyed to a far country, and there **wasted his possessions with prodigal living**. But when he had spent all, there arose a severe famine in that land, and he began to be in want.*

*Then he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. and he would gladly have filled his stomach with the pods that the swine ate, and no one gave him anything. But when he came to himself, he said, 'How many of my father's hired servants have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! **I will arise and go to my father, and will say to him, "Father, I have sinned against heaven and before you, and I am no longer worthy to be called your son. Make me like one of your hired servants."***

*And he arose and came to his father. But when he was still a great way off, **his father saw him and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck and kissed him. And the son said to him, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and in your sight, and am no longer worthy to be called your son.'***

***But the father said to his servants, 'Bring out the best robe and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand and sandals on his feet. And bring the fatted calf here and kill it, and let us eat and be merry; for this my son was dead and is alive again; he was lost and is found.'** And they began to be merry.*

*Now his older son was in the field. And as he came and drew near to the house, he heard music and dancing. So he called one of the servants and asked what these things meant. And he said to him, 'Your brother has come, and because he has received him safe and sound, your father has killed the fatted calf.'*

*But he was angry and would not go in. Therefore his father came out and pleaded with him. So he answered and said to his father,*

*'Lo, these many years I have been serving you; I never transgressed your commandment at any time; and yet you never gave me a young goat, that I might make merry with my friends. But as soon as this son of yours came, who devoured your livelihood with harlots, you killed the fatted calf for him.'*

*And he said to him, '**Son, you are always with me, and all that I have is yours. It was right that we should make merry and be glad, for your brother was dead and is alive again, and was lost and is found.**'" (Luke 15:11-32)*

Again, this is an extremely powerful story that you will all need to grab a hold of if you have backslid from the Lord to any appreciable degree in this life. God the Father made sure this specific story was put in the Bible so as to let everyone know that He will take you back if you have fallen away from Him for any length of time in this life.

Notice what got the younger son back into the good graces of his father – it was his **truly repentant heart**.

He knew that he had did wrong and that he had sinned against both his father and God Almighty Himself and was not afraid to admit it directly to him. He was coming back to his father with a truly broken, remorseful, and repentant heart, as he had found out the hard way that he had been living his life in all of the wrong ways with the blessings that his father had initially given to him.

If the father in this story was willing to take his son fully back into his good graces as a result of the son admitting his sins and transgressions against him, then God the Father can do the exact same thing with each one of you – if you will only be willing to admit that you have done wrong in His sight and that you have followed the wrong path in this life.

This parable dramatically shows you the mercy and love that God is capable of showing you if you will only humble yourself before Him, confess out your sins and transgressions before Him, and then ask Him to take you back.

## **2. God Will Forgive All of Your Sins**

The next thing you will really need to get a hold of is that God can fully forgive all of the sins you have ever committed against Him, especially the sins you have committed against Him while you have been in this backslidden state with Him.

Again, there is no sin so bad, so evil, and so vile that cannot be fully forgiven and fully washed away by the blood of Jesus Christ. No matter

how many marriages you have been through, no matter how many people you have fornicating with, no matter how many drugs you have taken or experimented with, no matter how many criminal enterprises you have been involved in, God can still fully forgive you of all of your personal sins, no matter how bad and how extreme some of them may have been.

Here are some of the most powerful verses in the Bible showing you that the blood of Jesus Christ can fully wash away every single one of your personal sins:

1. ***"Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need." (Hebrews 4:16)***
2. ***"Come to me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light." (Matthew 11:28)***
3. ***"Cast your burden on the Lord, and He shall sustain you; He shall never permit the righteous to be moved." (Psalm 55:22)***
4. ***"My little children, these things I write to you, that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous." (1 John 2:1)***
5. ***"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." (1 John 1:9)***
6. ***"Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord." (Acts 3:19)***
7. ***"I, even I, am He who blots out your transgressions for My own sake; and I will not remember your sins. Put Me in remembrance; let us contend together; state your case, that you may be acquitted." (Isaiah 43:25-26)***
8. ***"There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus ... " (Romans 8:1)***
9. ***"Come now and let us reason together," says the Lord, "Though your sins are like scarlet, they shall be as white***

*as snow.” (Isaiah 1:18)*

10. ***“Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away, behold, all things have become new.” (2 Corinthians 5:17)***
11. ***“As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us.” (Psalm 103:12)***
12. ***“In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.” (Ephesians 1:7)***

All of these verses mean exactly what they are saying. Notice some of the extreme wording that God is using when it comes to His ability to be able to fully forgive you of all of your personal sins under the shed blood of His Son Jesus.

First of all, that His throne is a throne of grace and mercy. The word **“grace”** in this verse means the **“unmerited mercy and favor of God.”** In other words, God will have mercy on you, take you back, and fully forgive you of all of your sins if you will just make the effort to come back to Him with a humble, contrite, and repentant heart.

In the second verse, Jesus is calling out to all of those who are in a very heavy laden state. Many of you who are in this backslidden state are now under a very heavy yoke of bondage and fear due to the desperate straits you now find yourself in.

Jesus is now offering every single one of you a way out. He is telling you in this verse that His yoke is easy, that your burden can once again be made light, and that you can find real rest and peace for your souls if you will just come back to Him right as you are now and fully submit yourself back to Him.

Notice also that if you fully confess your sins before God, that He will be faithful and just to fully forgive you of all of your sins and dean you up from all of the unrighteousness that has occurred from those sins. In other words, you can be made completely whole and clean again if you will just come before the Lord and personally confess out all of your sins to Him. All of the slime that you now have on you from your past sins can be completely washed off you by the blood of Jesus if you will just take the full forgiveness that He is now offering you.

To really drive home the point that God can fully forgive all of your sins, He uses some additional extreme wording in the above verses such as that all of your sins can be **“blotted out,”** that He will **“not remember”** your sins, that your sheets will be made as **“white as snow,”** and that

your sins will now be removed from Him as far as **“the east is from the west.”**

The last verse really says it all – that we simply have full forgiveness for all of our sins through the blood that Jesus has already shed for all of us on the cross. As a result of being able to have all of our sins fully forgiven with the Lord, the Bible tells us that we are now all **“new creations”** in Jesus, and that all of the old things from our past have now **“passed away.”**

Again, to any of you who have backslid to any appreciable degree in this life, you can now have your very first love Jesus Christ come back to you if you will just do your part and reach out to Him. Jesus is right there waiting for you to come back to Him. He can take you back right now, right where you are standing at, and start all over again with each one of you, no matter how bad things may be in your life right now.

### **3. The Love and Mercy of God**

To add the icing on the above cake, here are some more verses that will show you how loving and merciful both God the Father and Jesus Christ really are. These verses should be meditated on and grounded on, as they are all giving us very powerful revelation into the nature and personality of God Himself.

If you feel God is simply too far away from you and that there is no way He would ever take you back – again, study these next set of verses very carefully and then add them into the ones just listed above on forgiveness.

Put both of these kinds of verses together and the Bible is telling you loud and clear, that God will take you back if you will just make the effort on your end to reach out to Him. It really is that simple and that easy. You reach out to God and then He will start to do the rest. He will help you get your life back in order and put you on the perfect divine path that He already had set up for your life before you were even born into your mother’s womb.

1. **“... But You are God, ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, slow to anger, abundant in kindness ...”**  
**(Nehemiah 9:17)**
2. **“The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and abounding in mercy.” (Psalm 103:8)**

3. "But You, O Lord, are a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering and abundant in mercy and truth." (***Psalm 86:15***)
4. "Return to the Lord your God, for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness ..." (***Joel 2:13***)
5. "The Lord is gracious and full of compassion, slow to anger and great in mercy. The Lord is good to all, and His tender mercies are over all His works." (***Psalm 145:8***)
6. "The Lord is good; His mercy is everlasting ..." (***Psalm 100:5***)
7. "For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward those who fear Him ... But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting on those who fear Him." (***Psalm 103:11, 17***)

These verses are all very strong and powerful verses. These verses are giving us an incredible glimpse into the mind and personality of both God the Father and Jesus Christ. Notice the words "**mercy**" or "**merciful**" are in every single one of these verses.

If you are in a backslidden state with the Lord, then you will need both the love and mercy of God on both you and your life. The mercy of God will allow Him to take you back and start working with you all over again. And all of these verses are not only telling you that our God is very merciful, but they are also telling you that He is "**abundant**" in this mercy. In other words, God is full of love and mercy and He wants to fully extend it to you if you will only do your part and recommit your life back to Him.

According to some of my Bible Dictionaries and Commentaries, the word "**mercy**" means the following:

- ***Compassion or forbearance shown to an offender***
- ***Kindness, lovingkindness, unfailing love, tenderness, faithfulness***
- ***To feel or show compassion, to love deeply, to show pity, to tenderly regard someone, to tenderly love***
- ***A divine quality by which God faithfully keeps His promises and maintains His covenant relationship with His chosen people despite their unworthiness and unfaithfulness***

- ***The compassionate disposition to forgive offenders or adversaries and to help or spare them in their sorry plight***

These definitions perfectly spell out what the mercy of God is all about. Again, to any of you who are in this backslidden state with the Lord, meditate on these verses and definitions on the mercy of God, and realize that God will take you back and give you a full second chance if you will just make the effort on your end to reach out to Him.

## **How to Get Back on Track With the Lord**

Again, I want to reiterate, no matter how far you feel you are from God, no matter how many years you have been away from Him, and no matter how many bad and evil sins you have committed against Him, God can still fully take you back at anytime and start to work with you all over again just like the father did with the prodigal son in the above parable!

It is never too late to try and get the show going back with the Lord. Moses was 80 years old when God called him out of the desert to embark on and complete one of the greatest deliverance missions of all times. Moses worked for God on this deliverance mission with the children of Israel from the ages of 80 years old to 120 years old. **So it is never too late to recommit your life back to the Lord to see what He can still do with it with what little time you still have left down here.**

To those of you who feel like you have been in a backslidden state with the Lord for quite a number of years, and would like to recommit your life back to the Him and enter into His perfect plan and destiny for your life, here are the steps we recommend that you take to get yourself back on track with the Lord.

### **1. The Full Surrender**

As we have said over and over again in many of our articles, the very first step you will need to take is to make a full and complete surrender of your entire life over to the Lord.

You have been running your life over all of these years and now your life is in a state of total shambles as result of trying to do everything out of your own intelligence levels and out of your own flesh. You will now need to turn the reigns of your life back over to the Lord and let Him run your life from here on in, not you or anyone else in your life.

We ask that you go to our article titled, "The Full Surrender" in the Bible Basics section of our site. Read this article in its complete entirety and then do the full surrender prayer that is in there if you are in complete



agreement that the Lord should be the One who should be running your life from here on in.

Once you make that full surrender to the Lord as explained in that article, then God will start to move to help clean up your life and get you back into the perfect plan that He has set up for your life. But your first part will be to make that full surrender to Him. It's your all for His all.

## **2. Confess All of Your Known Sins to the Lord**

The next step we would recommend you take is to take a piece of paper, go back in memory lane, and write down every single sin you can think of that you have committed against the Lord over all of those backslidden years.

After you have all of them written down, then humbly go before the Lord in prayer and confess out each one of these known sins directly to Him and ask Him to fully forgive you and wash you clean from all of these sins by the blood that Jesus has already shed for you on the cross.

Tell God that you are really sorry for rebelling against Him over all of these years and that you now want to do things His way, not your way – and that you now fully realize that He should have been the One running your life over all of these years, not you or anyone else in your life.

Have a good, heart-to-heart talk with the Lord, pouring yourself out to Him with everything that has occurred to you in all of those backslidden years. Also, be open and sensitive to any specific sins the Holy Spirit may bring back up to your remembrance that will need to be confessed.

Bare your soul, bare your heart, and bare your emotions with the Lord. Do not be afraid to let it all out with the Lord. This type of deep, heart-to-heart talk with God could last for several days, if not several weeks. Stay with it as long as you feel like you want to so you can get everything off your chest that needs to be said between you and the Lord. The Holy Spirit will also be helping to guide you through this kind of emotional talk and discourse with the Lord.

## **3. Re-establish Your Personal Relationship With the Lord and Start Growing in Him**

After you have made a full and complete surrender of your entire life over to the Lord and have fully confessed out all of your known sins to Him, then let it go, take your life one day at a time, and start to re-establish your personal relationship with the Lord and start growing back in Him. This will not all happen overnight, but over time.

Here are some suggestions to get all of this going again with the Lord:

- 1.** Start reading your Bible on a regular basis so you can start growing in the Lord again.
- 2.** Join a good, Spirit-filled church so you can get back into the flow and start fellowshiping with other believers.
- 3.** Keep the communication lines between you and the Lord always open and pray and talk to Him as much as you want. We have a very good article on seeking after the Lord. The title of this article is, "Seeking after the Lord With All of Your Heart." This article will show you how you can start to establish a closer and much more intimate personal relationship with the Lord.
- 4.** Use this website, as we have many articles covering all of the main basic areas of the Christian walk. These articles will help get you up and running in no time in the knowledge and ways of our Lord.
- 5.** Be very open and sensitive to any specific leadings you will receive from the Holy Spirit. You may need God's help in cleaning up some of the wreckage that may have occurred in your life. God will start to guide you as to what to do and how to do it so you can get your life back in order.

God will also be setting you up and guiding you into whatever His perfect plan will be for you in this life. It is the job of the Holy Spirit to lead you in this life, and He will now be the One to take complete charge of your life and guide you as to where He will want you to go and what He will want you to do so you can fully accomplish everything that God will want you to do for Him in this life.

## Conclusion

Again, we cannot state this strongly enough – if any of you out there have fallen into some real hard times as a result of trying to do everything on your own, and you have seriously backslid from the Lord over all of these years, there is still hope and a brand new life waiting for you. And that brand new life and hope will be found in your very first love, Jesus Christ, who you left years ago.

Jesus Christ is still your first Love and Savior, and also your Lord if you will just allow Him to take the reigns of your life and start over again.

You may have left your first Love, but Jesus has never left you. Jesus will fully take you back if you will just humble yourself before Him, admit your wrongdoings and sins before Him, and then ask Him to take full and complete control of your entire life from here on in. Your new life can

immediately begin the second you fully surrender your body, your soul, your spirit, and your entire life back into God's hands.

***You do not have to remain bound up and in torment for the rest of your earthly life if you have made a real mess of things as a result of trying to run your own life. God can still take you back at anytime and start all over again with each one of you, no matter how bad things may be in your life right now.***

***You can once again be that brand new creation that God has made you to be in His Son Jesus. You can once again have all old things pass away by the power of the Holy Spirit now working for you. You can now be given a brand new life with a brand new direction, except this time it will be God's direction for your life, not your direction or anyone else's direction for your life.***

***God will now be your Lord, your Deliverer, your Helper, and your new Employer. You will now work for God, live for God, and die for God. And with God now being the One who will be running your entire life from here on in, things will now start to turn around for you.***

Now you will start producing the real fruit that you should have been producing in the Lord years ago. Now you will find who your true soul mate is going to be if you are not married yet and if it is in God's perfect will that you get married in this life.

Now you will find the job or jobs that God will be wanting you to work at. Now you will be finding out what your true calling and purpose is going to be in this life, since God will now be leading you into your true divine destiny with Him.

One of the best verses in the Bible that perfectly sums up what the big picture is really all about is the following verse:

***"Unless the Lord builds the house, they labor in vain who build it." (Psalm 127:1)***

Bottom line – unless God is the One who is building up your life in the direction that He will want it to go in, you will end up laboring in vain when it is all finally said and done.

Sooner or later the house you are attempting to build in this life operating out of your own efforts and wisdom will come crashing down on you. And when it does, you will have absolutely nothing to show for it as far as the Lord is concerned, since you did it operating out of your own will instead

of His will – and you will thus end up wasting your one and only opportunity down here to accomplish whatever God’s perfect best would have been for your life.

You only have one shot, one window, and one golden opportunity to leave your mark in this world, and that can only be done by operating in God’s perfect will for your life, not your will.

To those of you who have already learned this lesson the hard way, you can still get back on board with the Lord at anytime and start a brand new life with Him. God can still do big and great things for you and through you with whatever time you still have left, but He has to be the One to run your life, not you or anyone else.

One of the greatest heroes in the Bible, Joshua, said to choose this day who you will serve. He chose God and as a result, he ended up becoming one of the greatest heroes in the Bible. Let God do the same thing for you. It is never too late to step into your true divine destiny with the Lord – no matter what your age or what your current situation is!

## God Will Help You With Your Sin Areas

One of the most frequent type emails we keep receiving on a regular basis is people writing in asking how they can get victory over specific sin areas they are still are engaging in. When many of them write in, they have been battling certain types of sins for many years. They would get a little victory with the Lord, but then several months later they would always fall right back into the same sin area.

By the time they usually write into us, they are beat up, worn out, tormented, and some of them are even afraid of losing their salvation with the Lord. They feel God is going to eventually give up on them and cast them off forever since we do have verses like this in our Bible.

What we always tell these people is to not give up, that they have not lost their salvation with the Lord, and that God will not give up on them as long as they stay in the battle and do not give up on Him. The Bible tells us that the Holy Spirit will not wrestle with a man forever, but this verse is also telling us that He **will wrestle** and try to get someone cleaned up and delivered as long as that person does not give up and throw in the towel on the Lord.

***I want to use this article to go a little deeper into this subject matter for those of you who have been engaging in different sin areas where you are having a very hard time in getting pulled out and cleaned up by the Lord. What I have learned over the years with the Lord is that He will roll up His sleeves and get right down there in the trenches with you to help deliver you and get you pulled out of these sin pits.***

***I have seen God do this so many times with so many people, that I have a slang expression for it when I see it occur – and that slang expression is "trench warfare." God will get right down in there in the trenches with you, and He will stay with you for as long as it will take to get the job done and get you pulled out and delivered. And sometimes these types of deliverances will take years to get done, not weeks or months.***

Many of these people are also afraid to reach out for help from other Christians for fear they will be judged and criticized for being in these sin areas for as long as they have. As a result, they keep a lot of this to themselves. Many judgmental type Christians will start bashing these type of people, as they think they should not be in these types of sin areas for as long as they have been in them.

But again, what I have seen from first hand experience with the Lord, is that some people will need a certain amount of time to get fully delivered with the Lord, and many of these types of cases are deliverances that are more slow and progressive, which means they will not happen overnight.

Here are some of the specific sin areas that I have seen where the Lord dealt with these people over a certain period of time, and in many of these areas that period of time was years, not months or weeks.

- **Pornography**
- ***Alcoholism***
- **Drug usage including pot**
- **Homosexual lifestyle**
- **Some type of criminal activity**
- **Heavy addictive gambling**
- **Psychics – we have seen some Christians get hooked on going to psychics**
- **Verbally and/or physically abusive behavior toward their loved ones**
- **Cigarette smoking**
- **Fornication**
- **Adultery**
- **Promiscuous lifestyle**
- **Aberrant sexual type activity**

I know some people will not consider cigarette smoking an actual sin, but the reason I have listed it with the other sin areas is that this vice is so deadly, that it can eventually kill you. I have also seen God move so many times on people who smoke, that I have to include this vice in this type of an article.

As we all know, internet pornography is also a major sin area that many Christians are still engaging in these days, including many pastors. Last statistic I heard was that 50% of all Christian pastors are still hooked on internet pornography, along with 50% of the men, as well as a certain percentage of the women.

If you look very closely at all of the above sin areas, the one common thread they all have is that they can all lead to very addictive behaviors where you keep repeating the same behavior over and over again. They all bring with them a certain amount of physical and mental stimulation, a certain amount of arousal and pleasure, and that is why it is so hard for some Christians to pull completely out of these types of sin areas.

Our own natural will power and emotional strength is limited and that is why some people will need the strength and power of the Holy Spirit Himself to finally break these kinds of addictive behaviors off of them once and for all. If you try and do this solely out of your flesh, you may

not be able to succeed unless you have above average will power, which some people do have.

Some people can simply use their own natural will power and simply pull out of these addictive type sins once they receive the conviction of the Holy Spirit upon them. But others will not have that kind of strong will power and as a result, they will pull in and out of these sin areas trying to break free from them. Just when they feel they have finally broken free, something else will happen and they will then fall right back into the pit. They will wrestle with both themselves and with God trying to break free from these different sin areas.

To those of you who are still in the trenches, still wrestling and battling with these types of addictive behaviors, I want to use this article to try and give you some basic information and knowledge that will really help you finally get total victory over these different types of heavier sin areas.

***And again, I want to reiterate that God will stay with you as long as you will stay with Him. Do not ever give up if you are caught in one of these kinds of heavier sin areas. Even if it takes a matter of years, the Lord will stay with you and finally deliver you if you just will stay the course with Him and not give up and throw in the towel and walk off His playing field.***

## 1. Bible Verses on God's Mercy and Patience

The first thing you are going to need, especially if you have been in one of these sin areas for quite a long period of time, is to realize that God the Father is a very **patient and merciful God**.

Many Christians are afraid of God the Father due to all of the heavy judgment action they have read about in the OT. But if you read the rest of the verses about God the Father in the OT, you will also see that He has a very loving, merciful, tender, and patient side to His personality.

Though God is obviously capable of great wrath and anger if provoked, the Bible also tells us that the Lord is slow to anger, which means it does take quite a bit to get Him to blow. God does not get as easily mad as many of us do when we lose our patience and tempers down here on this earth. God has a much longer fuse than we do, and this is why you should never be afraid to approach Him if you need help in this kind of an area.

Again, I have seen God the Father show **great patience** and **great mercy** when working with people who have fallen into some of these kinds of addictive behaviors. I have seen Him get right down there in the

trenches with these people and stay with them for years if need to be to finally get them delivered and cleaned up once and for all.

If you are one of those Christians who are battling some of the above sin areas and you have other judgmental Christians ripping on you and telling you that you are on your way to hell, do not listen to them. As long as you are being open and honest with both yourself and the Lord, He will continue to **stay with you** and **work with you** until He gets you fully delivered from the specific sin area you are caught up in.

Many times when God delivers someone, it will be a more slow and progressive type deliverance. God can obviously do the quick and instantaneous type deliverances whenever He wants to, and those are always spectacular and mind-blowing when we do see them. But these slower and more progressive types of deliverances are just as spectacular and mind-blowing, if not possibly more so, as the battle is longer and much more fierce and intense as versus a quick and sudden type healing and deliverance.

Now here are some very important Bible verses you will need to have so you can see that God the Father really does have this patient and merciful side to His personality.

1. **"... But You are God, ready to pardon, gracious and merciful, slow to anger, abundant in kindness ..."** (*Nehemiah 9:17*)
2. **"The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and abounding in mercy."** (*Psalms 103:8*)
3. **"But You, O Lord, are a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering and abundant in mercy and truth."** (*Psalms 86:15*)
4. **"Return to the Lord your God, for He is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness ..."** (*Joel 2:13*)
5. **"The Lord is gracious and full of compassion, slow to anger and great in mercy. The Lord is good to all, and His tender mercies are over all His works."** (*Psalms 145:8*)
6. **"The Lord is good; His mercy is everlasting ..."** (*Psalms 100:5*)
7. **"For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward those who fear Him ... But the mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting on those who**



**fear Him." (Psalm 103:11,17)**

**8. "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control." (Galatians 5:22)**

Especially notice in three of the above verses it says that God is **slow to anger**. And if God is slow to anger, this means He has a great deal of patience within His personality.

Also notice the last verse on the 9 fruits of the Holy Spirit. One of the nine fruits is longsuffering, which is another term for the word "**patience**." So not only does God the Father have maximum patience in His personality, but the Holy Spirit Himself also has maximum patience in His personality. And the Holy Spirit will be the One who will eventually deliver you, as the Bible tells us that the Holy Spirit is the One who will actually put to death the deeds of the body. If you were not aware of this specific verse from our Bible, here it is:

"For if you live according to the flesh you will die; **but if by the Spirit you put to death the deeds of the body, you will live**. For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God." (Romans 8:13-14)

Notice this verse specifically says that the deeds of the body will be put to death "**by the Spirit**." And all of the heavy sin areas mentioned above are definitely "**deeds**" of the body that God would like to put to death once and for all.

Now here are some key definitions on what the word "**longsuffering**" means from some of the different Bible Dictionaries:

- **Forbearance, patience**
- **Patient endurance and steadfastness under provocation**
- **Forbearance under ill-will, with no thought of retaliation**
- **Patience, endurance, steadfastness and forbearance**
- **Forbearance under suffering and endurance in the face of adversity**
- **Ability to endure persecution and ill-treatment**

Notice the key words of **patience, endurance, and steadfastness**. This means that God will **have patience with you**, along with **staying steadfast with you** and **enduring the trial with you**. In other words, God will stay with you for as long as it will take to get the job done, which in this case will be to get you fully delivered from the heavy sin area you may be caught up in.

***Again, if there are any of you out there who have been battling with some of these heavier kinds of addictive***

***behaviors and you are afraid that God is going to abandon you and cast you off forever, do not let that kind of fear get a hold of you and keep you from moving forward with God. Demons love to put that kind of fear on people so they think they may have lost their salvation with the Lord – but do not fall for it!***

***If you keep working with God, God will keep working with you. And sooner or later you will get the victory with the Lord if you do not give up and walk away from Him.***

## **2. Be Led by the Holy Spirit as to What Steps to Take to Break the Addiction**

This next step is going to be very, very important. Depending on exactly what you are involved in and how long you have been involved in it, the Holy Spirit may start to give you some specific steps He will want you to take on your end. And if you start to receive those specific steps from Him, it would be our very strong recommendation that you listen to Him and do exactly what He is telling you to do, as each one of these steps will be a major part of your healing and deliverance.

This step right here is why many Christians do not get a quick deliverance from the Lord – because they are not taking the initial steps He is wanting them to take.

Depending on what you are addicted to, God may want you to work with a medical doctor, a Christian counselor, or some type of support group to help get you over the hump.

Many people who are hooked on drugs, alcohol, gambling, and pornography sometimes have to get together with a good Christian counselor and/or possibly a good Christian support group depending on how heavy their addiction is. They may need the help and support of other Christians to help them get through it.

What God will do is **work through** these other people to try and help you out. This is why it is extremely important that you take whatever steps the Lord is leading you to take. Do it God's way right at the beginning and you will then get to the finish line much quicker.

God the Father is the **Master Strategist** and He knows **exactly** what He is doing and **exactly** how to handle each one of these kinds of heavier situations.

### 3. Be Willing to Enter into a True Sanctification Process With the Lord

One area we always lead people to when they write in on these kinds of dilemmas, is to lead them into a true sanctification process with the Lord. We have one very special article alone on what the sanctification process is all about with the Lord and how to enter into it with Him.

I cannot tell you how many emails we have received from people over the last 4-5 years who did the special prayer that was in that article and then were willing to work with the Lord in the areas that He was wanting to work with them on. Over a period of time, they all said that God changed their personalities for the better and that they would never go back to the old person they used to be before they started this sanctification process up with the Lord.

Sanctification with the Lord is truly the thing that will cause major and dramatic changes to occur within your personality over time with the Lord – and it will also help you get victory over any sinful habits you are still engaging in, like some of the ones mentioned above at the top of this article.

Once you give the Lord a full, solid, green light to start this sanctification process within you, He will then enter you right into it. And from there, both He and the Holy Spirit will start to work with you on exactly what it is they want to add into your personality, and exactly what it is they want to remove from your personality so you can then become the true sanctified saint that God is wanting you to become in Him in this life.

Here is the direct link to this article if you would like to enter into this holy process with the Lord. The title of this article is **“Sanctification”** and it is the very first article listed in our Sanctification Section.

“Sanctification”

***Again, if you really want God to pull you out of any heavy sin areas you are still engaging in, it would be our very strong recommendation that you also add this sanctification process in as part of your daily walk with the Lord.***

***This one step alone could completely turn the tide for you and get you fully delivered from your heavy sin area, since you are giving both God and the Holy Spirit a full, solid, green light to change you from the inside out!***

## Conclusion

As I said at the top of this article, I have seen God get down into the trenches with so many people in the different sins areas they were engaging in, that I have labeled it **"trench warfare"** when I do see it occur with Him.

I know some Christians will look at the above sin areas and will think to themselves that there should be no excuse for any true Christian to still be wallowing and engaging in these types of heavier sins, especially since we all now have the Holy Spirit living on the inside of us.

However, though we all know that these types of activities are definitely sins in the eyes of God since the Bible tells us so, what happens with some people in these types of sin areas is that a mental stronghold can form out in that person's mind and thinking. Also, with drugs and cigarettes, a chemical dependency can occur where the body itself will become addicted to the behavior.

And once that stronghold forms out, either in the mind and/or the body, it will take the power of the Holy Spirit to finally break it off them for good. The Bible tells us that the anointing of God will break the **yoke of bondage**. And these types of heavy sin areas definitely have a yoke of bondage to them.

The Bible also tells us that our spirits and flesh will war against one another, and all of the above sin areas are sins of the flesh. Combine the war that goes on between our spirits and our flesh, and then the fact that some people will have a strong mental stronghold form out once they start to engage in some of this kind of heavier activity, and you will now have a person who will need a full scale deliverance from the Lord.

One man I know hooked on pornography took 5 years to get a full and complete deliverance from the Lord. And the Lord stood completely by His side for those 5 years until it was finally broken off him.

Another girl I used to work with was horribly addicted to cigarettes for over 25 years. She asked God for His help to break it off her and it took a good 10 years before it finally got broken off her for good.

What would happen is that God would move in on her in waves. She would be off the cigarettes for 1-2 months, but then all of a sudden she would fall right back into it. But finally at the 10 year mark, God made another strong move on her and this time she really grabbed a hold of His power and finally broke this bad habit off her for good. She has not had another cigarette for over 4 years now.

What got these people eventually delivered was their **tenacity** and their **willingness to stay with the Lord**, no matter how long it was going to take to break free from their addictions. And in each one of these cases, God stayed with them the whole time and continued to work with them until they finally broke free from their addictive behavior. God did not bail out on them and leave them to fend for themselves. He stayed right there with them the whole time until the victory was finally secured.

When you see God stay that long with someone, especially on a heavier type of sin area, this is where you really see the love, mercy, and patience that God really has not only with them, but with the rest of us as well, since the Bible tells us that He is no respecter of persons.

Again, if there are any of you out there who are still caught up in any type of addictive sin area, and you are finding yourself having a very hard time in breaking completely away from it, try taking steps #2 and #3 above to see if that will not turn the tide for you.

I cannot stress enough how powerful the sanctification process is with the Lord. If there is one thing that is going to change you from the inside out, including breaking off these kinds of addictive behaviors, it will be allowing the Lord to enter you into a true sanctification process with Him.

Once you give God the Father and the Holy Spirit a full, solid, green light to begin this sanctification process on the inside of your being, the Holy Spirit will waste no time in starting to change you at a pace that will be very comfortable for you to handle. God will not overwhelm you or push you past your own personal limits in this realm.

***And once the Holy Spirit starts to move on the inside of your being to change and transform you into the kind of person God wants you to become in Him, nothing will be able to stand against His power and might, including any type of addictive behavior you may still be caught up in.***

***The Holy Spirit can take out any type of bad and negative qualities you may still have operating in your personality if you will just give Him your permission to do this type of work on the inside of your being, and then be willing to work with Him on it once He starts it up with you.***

I know the above two steps may sound a bit simplistic and almost too easy, but I have seen them work over and over again with so many people with the Lord. Once again, if you are caught up in any one of these heavier type of sin areas, and you have not been able to break free from them using your own natural strength and will power, try giving the Lord a chance.

***Here are the 3 basic steps you will need to take to get God to move in on you and deliver you from your specific stronghold areas.***

- Simply cry out to the Lord and approach Him in prayer, asking Him to deliver you from the specific sin area you are still caught up in, as everything always starts out with a good, strong, heartfelt prayer to the Lord.
- From there, go the extra step and ask God to enter you into a true sanctification process so the Holy Spirit can begin the job of changing and transforming you from the inside out into the kind of person God wants you to become in Him.
- And once you put those two special requests before the the Lord, make sure you obey any specific directions and instructions you may receive from the Holy Spirit.

Once you fully surrender the entire matter into God's hands, God will then start to move to help you out and get you eventually delivered. What I cannot tell you is exactly what steps God will be asking you to take for Him, and how long it will take before the final deliverance comes. Each of these cases will be unique and different.

That is why we as Christians should be very careful on how harshly we judge other Christians who are still engaging in these types of heavier sins. As long as we know they are really working with God to break free from their addictive behaviors, we should also pray for them as well. Some of these people will also have demons attached to them as a result of being in some of these heavy sin areas for too long, and that could also be compounding the problem and making it harder for them to pull out of it.

***Bottom line on all of this – God can fully deliver anyone from any kind of heavy sin area they are still caught up in if that person will just properly approach the Lord in good heartfelt prayer and from there, be willing to be guided by the Holy Spirit as to exactly what steps they will need to take on their end.***

***Our God is still in the deliverance business, and there is nothing that He cannot break someone free from if that person will just work with Him on it and do exactly what He tells them to do. It really is that simple and that easy.***

# The Power of Christian Music in Your Home

Once you become saved and born again in the Lord, what you will find out very quickly is that God will start to spiritually feed you through several different main areas.

## ***God will feed you through:***

- **His Word**
- **His Direct Personal Relationship With You**
- ***Your Personal Prayer Life With Him***
- ***Good, Anointed, Christian Books***
- **Good Anointed Teachers of His Word**
- **Other Like-Minded Believers**
- **Good, Anointed, Christian Music**

For this article, I want to key in on the very last one – good, anointed, Christian music. Some of you have already found this secret out with the Lord, but others of you have not.

I personally like a wide range of music, with everything from Christian music to country, pop, soul, jazz, and classical. However, there is something completely different about Christian music compared to the other kinds of music we now have available to us. And that one main difference is that a lot of the Christian music we have today is very anointed music. This kind of music literally has the anointing of the Holy Spirit Himself on it.

Not that God cannot anoint certain songs in other types of music when He wants to, but the anointing is much stronger on Christian music than it is on the other types of music we have today.

The reason is obvious – Christian music is directly worshiping and talking about God Himself rather than our lives, loves, and problems in this life. As a result of Christian music being more highly anointed by God Himself than other types of music will be, what this means for us Christians is that this kind of music will feed us deeper and better than any other types of music will do.

What I have learned to do over the years is to separate my Christian music from the other kinds of music I like when I record them on my CD's because it has a completely different effect on my mind and emotions than the other kinds of music will have. As a result of Christian music being more highly anointed by God Himself, this means that this kind of music can literally change the spiritual atmosphere in the houses we live in or in the cars we are driving in when we start to play it.

Many of you have already found this secret early on with the Lord, but others of you have not. For those of you who have not, let me give you some very interesting verses from the Bible to show you how powerful of a thing it can be if you can learn how to incorporate good, anointed, Christian music in your life from time to time.

## The Scripture Verses

For those of you who have not found this little secret in the Lord, let me give you one very interesting verse from back in the OT that will show you how playing good anointed music can completely change the spiritual atmosphere in your house, and have a very uplifting effect on both your mind, emotions, and energy levels, especially if you have gone through a very rough day and you are feeling a bit down or under a lot of mental and emotional stress.

This verse is talking about what had occurred between King Saul and David one day. Here is the verse, and then I will point out 3 key powerful things that had occurred as a result of David playing good anointed music for King Saul.

***"And so it was, whenever the spirit from God was upon Saul, that David would take a harp and play it with his hand. Then Saul would become refreshed and well, and the distressing spirit would depart from him." (1 Samuel 16:23)***

This verse in particular shows you how powerful music can be to change someone's mood, state of mind, and energy levels. Notice three powerful key things from this verse:

**1.** As we all know from Saul's story, he was a very tormented soul who was constantly getting himself into trouble with the Lord. However, when David would start to play music for him with his harp, this verse tells us that he then became **"refreshed."**

If this music was starting to refresh Saul, then this verse also tells you that he was not refreshed before David started to play this kind of music for him. This music then recharged his batteries for him. It helped to increase his energy levels.

How many of you need to be refreshed after a hard day's work? If good anointed music from the Lord can totally refresh a tormented soul like Saul, then what can this kind of anointed music personally do for you?

**2.** The next thing to pick up from this verse is that this kind of music from David made Saul **"well."** I believe this word is referring to Saul's state of mind. In other words, it brought him back into a good and



positive state of mind which is where he should have been all along with the Lord.

Again, different types of trials and tribulations in this life can knock you out of your good and positive state of mind with the Lord. If this should ever happen to any of you – good, anointed, Christian music can help lift you out of any bad mood you may have fallen into because the anointing is so strong on some of this type of music.

Remember, it is the anointing of God that will break the yoke of bondage. And with a lot of the Christian music we have today being anointed by the Lord Himself, this means that He can sometimes use His own music to help break off any bondages that may be trying to get on you.

Again, if good, anointed, Christian music can help make well a tormented soul like Saul, then what can this kind of music do for you if your mind, mood, and emotions have been knocked a bit off kilter with the Lord as a result of having a rough day or going through a rough season?

**3.** The third and final thing to pick up from this verse is the very last part of it, where it says that a distressing spirit would then depart from Saul once David started to play his anointed music for him.

Many Bible scholars believe that this distressing spirit was actually a demonic spirit that was following and harassing Saul. If it was a demonic spirit, notice what happens next. This demon could not stand to be in the presence of good anointed music and he thus had to leave Saul once David started to play it.

As we explained to you in our article titled, "Using Worship and Praise in Spiritual Warfare," all demons hate any type of anointed Christian music, especially any type of worship and praise music.

***So not only will good, anointed, Christian music refresh you, calm your emotions, recharge your energy levels, and help bring you back into a more positive state of mind, but it will also help drive away any demons who may be trying to harass you and oppress you from the outside.***

***Leave it to our God to capture in one, simple, little verse how powerful good, anointed, Christian music can be in our lives, and how it can literally change the entire spiritual atmosphere in our house or any other environment we may be currently operating in – like our cars, our work place if they will allow this kind of music to be played, or in a hotel room if you are traveling.***

So you can see how big of a thing music and singing really is to the Lord, here are 13 very powerful verses all showing us how God really likes songs and singing to be directed His way:

1. **"I will praise the name of God with a song,** and will magnify Him with thanksgiving." (*Psalm 69:30*)
2. **"I will sing to the Lord as long as I live; I will sing praise to my God while I have my being.** May my meditation be sweet to Him; I will be glad in the Lord." (*Psalm 104:33*)
3. "Praise God in His sanctuary; Praise Him in His mighty firmament! Praise Him for His mighty acts; Praise Him according to His excellent greatness! **Praise Him with the sound of the trumpet; Praise Him with the lute and harp! Praise Him with the timbrel and dance; Praise Him with stringed instruments and flutes! Praise Him with loud cymbals; Praise Him with high sounding cymbals!** Let everything that has breath praise the Lord. Praise the Lord!" (*Psalm 150:1-6*)
4. **"Oh, sing to the Lord a new song!** For He has done marvelous things; His right hand and His holy arm have gained Him the victory." (*Psalm 98:1*)
5. "But I will sing of Your power; yes, I will sing aloud of Your mercy in the morning; for You have been my defense and refuge in the day of my trouble. To You, O my Strength, I will sing praises; for God is my defense, the God of my mercy." (*Psalm 59:16*)
6. "Oh, clap your hands, all you peoples! Shout to the Lord with the voice of triumph! For the Lord Most High is awesome; He is a great King over all the earth ... **Sing praises to God, sing praises! ... For God is the King of all the earth; sing praises with understanding.**" (*Psalm 47:1,6*)
7. "Oh, give thanks to the Lord! Call upon His name; make known His deeds among the peoples. **Sing to Him, sing psalms to Him;** talk of all His wondrous works. Glory in His holy name; let the hearts of those rejoice who *seek the Lord*. *Seek the Lord and His strength, seek His face evermore.* Remember His marvelous works which He has done, His wonders, and the judgments of His mouth ..." (*Psalm 105:1-5*)
8. "Make a joyful shout to the Lord, all you lands! Serve the Lord with gladness, **come before His presence with singing.** Know that the Lord, He is God; it is He who has made us, and not we

ourselves. We are His people and the sheep of His pasture. Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, and into His courts with praise. Be thankful to Him, and bless His name. For the Lord is good; His mercy is everlasting, and His truth endures to all generations." (*Psalm 100:1-5*)

9. **"Oh come, let us sing to the Lord!** Let us shout joyfully to the Rock of our salvation. Let us come before His presence with thanksgiving; let us shout joyfully to Him with psalms. For the Lord is the great God, and the great King above all gods ... Oh come, let us worship and bow down; let us kneel before the Lord our Maker. For He is our God, and we are the people of His pasture, and the sheep of His hand." (*Psalm 95:1,6*)
10. "Make a joyful shout to God, all the earth! **Sing out the honor of His name**; make His praise glorious. Say to God, "How awesome are Your works! Through the greatness of Your power Your enemies shall submit themselves to You. **All the earth shall worship You and sing praises to You; they shall sing praises to Your name.**" (*Psalm 66:1-4*)
11. "Oh, sing to the Lord a new song! Sing to the Lord, all the earth. Sing to the Lord, bless His name; proclaim the good news of His salvation from day to day. Declare His glory among the nations, His wonders among all peoples. For the Lord is great and greatly to be praised; He is to be feared above all gods ... Give to the Lord glory and strength. Give to the Lord the glory due His name; bring an offering, and come into His courts. Oh, worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness! Tremble before Him, all the earth." (*Psalm 96:1,7*)
12. **"Let them praise His name with dance; let them sing praises to Him with the timbrel and harp.** For the Lord takes pleasure in His people; He will beautify the humble with salvation. Let the saints be joyful in glory; **let them sing aloud on their beds.** Let the high praises of God be in their mouth ... (*Psalm 149:3*)
13. Then David danced before the Lord with all his might ... "Therefore I will play music before the Lord. And I will be even more undignified than this, and will be humble in my own sight." (*2 Samuel 6:14, 21*)

As you can see from all of these different verses, music and singing is something the Lord really likes, especially when we are using it to worship and praise Him.

## Conclusion

I know many of you have already found this secret out with the Lord, that listening to good Christian music can help bring you out of the doldrums, recharge your energy levels, lift up your spirits, calm your emotions, and help bring you back into a good, right, positive state of mind with the Lord.

But for those of you who have never tried this, or did not realize that good, anointed, Christian music can have this kind of dramatic and powerful effect on both you and the environment you are currently living in, you might want to give this a try sometime.

There are different types of Christian music, so you will each have to find the right kinds of music that will best feed you and uplift you. But whatever kinds of Christian music the Lord will lead you to, try to incorporate this music into your personal walk with Him from time to time.

As we said at the top of this article, once you get saved and born again in the Lord, God will start to feed you through several different areas. And one of the areas that God would really like to use to feed you is good, anointed, Christian music.

If this kind of music can refresh and make well a tormented soul like Saul, then it can definitely help all of us. And now more than ever, with the state of the world and the bad recessions most economies are still in, we all need a little something extra that will help keep us centered and properly balanced in our walks with the Lord.

***Learning how to relax in the Lord through good, anointed, Christian music will really help take you out of yourself and all of your personal problems, and help bring you back into God's bubble, where His peace, love, and joy can be yours on a very regular basis.***